The Use and Intent of PROPHECY, in the Several Ages of the World.

IN SIX

DISCOURSES,

Delivered at the

TEMPLE-CHURCH,

In APRIL and MAY, 1724.

Published at the Defire of the Masters of the Bench of the Two Honourable Societies.

To which are added,

Four DISSERTATIONS.

- I. The Authority of the Second Epiftle of St. PETER.
- II. The Sense of the Antients before Christ, upon the Circumstances and Consequences of the FALL.
- III. The Bleffing of JUDAH, Gen. xlix.
- IV. CHRIST'S Entry into Jerusalem.

The FOURTH EDITION, Corrected and Enlarged.

By THO. SHERLOCK, D.D.

Dean of Chichester, and Master of the Temple, (Now Lord Bishop of SALISBURY.)

LONDON:

Printed for J. and H. PEMBERTON, against St. Dunstan's Church in Fleetstreet. 1744.

20



To the Worshipful the

MASTERS of the Bench

Of the two Honourable

Societies of the Temple,

THESE

DISCOURSES

(Published at their Desire)

Are INSCRIBED, by

Their most obedient

Humble Servant,

THO. SHERLOCK.

हैं एक कि मुक्किकी कि कि

MARS Charlenge Benche

Of the two Linearith

And Today of the Market of the

se a si il C.

DISCOURSES

(Malifold at this D.Co.)

for insecration, by

SO TATES OF D



DISCOURSE I.

minutes all Art and Deceit, in ferting forth

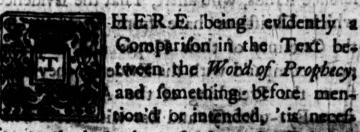
ence and Authority he had rais'd fuch Ex-

In them: But (we) were Exercit-

and Glorg, when there came

Som Si PET BR. 19.

We have also a more fure Word of Prophecy, whereunto ye do well that ye take beed, as unto a Light that shinesh in a dark Place, until the Day down, and the Day-Star drife in your Hearts.



finds and what the Thing is to which the

Word of Prophecy is compar'd and preferred. At the 16th Verse the Apostle says, We bove not followed cunningly devised Fables when the made known unto you the Power and Coming of our Lord Jefus Christ. And after thus difclaiming all Art and Deceit, in fetting forth the Promises and Expectations of the Gospel, he proceeds to declare upon what Evidence and Authority he had rais'd fuch Expectations in them: But (we) were Eye-witnesses of his Majesty, for he received from God the Father Honour and Glory, when there came fuch a Voice to bim from the excellent Glory; This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. And this Voice which came from Heaven we heard, when we were with him in the Holy Mount. Immediately follow the Words of the Text, We have also a more fure Word of Prophecy.

You see upon what Foundation their Inference stands, who affert, That the Evidence which Christians have from Prophecy for the Certainty of their Hopes and Expectations, compar'd with the Evidence they have from the Preaching of the Apostles, who were Eye-witnesses and Ear-witnesses of what they report concerning the Majesty of Christ, is the greater and surer Evidence; or in the Words

Words of a late Author, That Prophecy " is a stronger Argument than a Miracle, "which depends upon external Evidence " and Testimony." This Author has taken great Pains to thew, that the Argument from Prophecy for the Truths of Christianity, as managed and apply'd by the Writers of the New Testament, is absurd and ridiculous; and that we may not flatter outfelves with Hopes of Affiltance from other Arguments, he gives us this Text of St. Peter, to thew, by the Authority of our own Scriptures, that Prophecy, as bad an Argument as it is, As nevertheles the very best that our Cause affords: But his Views be to himfelf; what Truth there is in his Expolition and Application of this Part of Scripture, we shall foon the Hand of the Midiamies ; bate not I sol

Interpreters differ very much in expounding this Passage ; but all, as far as I fee, agree in rejecting this Senfe, which gives a Superiority to the Evidence of Prophecy above all other Evidence, by which the Truth of the Gospel is confirm'd; and indeed the Text expounded to this Meaning, contradicts not only the general Sense of Mankind upon this

A Discourse of the Grounds and Reasons of the Christian Religion, printed 1723. p. 27.

B 2 Sub-

Sabject, but will be found likewife inconfiftent with itself, and many other Places of Scripture, For, first, let any Man consider, and fay upon what Proof and Evidence the Authority of Prophecy itself depends: Can any Prophet give greater Proof of his Divine Mission than the Power of working Miracles? And if this be the last, and the greatest Proof he can give of his being fent by God, can the Evidence of Prophecy ever rife higher than the Evidence of Miracles, noon which it ultimately depends for all its Authority ? When Gideon was called to the Deliverance of Ifrael, the Angel of the Lord came and faid unto him. The Lord is with thee, thou mighty Mon of Kalour; - go in this thy Might, and they shalt fave Ifrael from the Hand of the Midianites; have not I fent thee? Here now was a Prophecy deliver'd by the Angel of the Lord to encourage his Undertaking. What fays Giden to ship? He defires a Sign , If now I bave found Bavour in thy Sight, then shew me a Sign that thou talkest with me. A Sign is given him, a miraculous Sign; he is fatisfied, and undertakes the Work appointed; to which he is again encouraged by two Miracles wrought at his Request, Judges vii. What think you now? The

The Prophecy deliver'd by the Angel was as much a Prophecy before, as it was after Miracles wrought in Confirmation of it: But washe Word of Prophecy more fure before the Miracles than after 2 If for why was a Sign defined? And when defired, why was it granted ! Does God work Miracles to humour Men in their Folly bepris it to confirm their Faith? If it be to confirm their Faith. then our Faith in the Prophets depends upon the Authority of Miracles; and fince the Stream can never rife above the Spring-Head. the Evidence of Prophecy cannot be greater than the Evidence of Mirecles But let us take an higher Inftance; Mafer was the first and the greatest Prophet of the Law, to whom God fooke Face to Face a He was salled by God to deliver the Children of Ifrael out of Egypt, and commission'd to affere them of God's immediate Protection. 2 This I fund pole was sufficient to make him a Prophet to Ifrael . But what tays Mofer? Behald, then will not believe me nor beat kenito my Knices on they will fay The Lord bath not appeared unto thee. Was this a foolish Complaint in Mofes ? If it was how came God to liften to it, and to furnish him with an Aprive above all Exception, by giving him impact

diately a Power to work Miracles in confirmation of his Prophecy? Does not this Method of God's Proceeding plainly thew, that Miracles are the Prophet's greatest Authority and Confirmation ? What is that superior Evidence of Prophecy then, which is faid formuch to exceed the Evidence of Miracles? But to go on: The Comparison in the Text, with respect to St. Peter himself, is between the Word of Prophecy, and the immediate Word of God: And according to this Exposition of the Text, St. Peter, who declares that he heard the Voice of God bimfelf in the Mount, is made in his Own Person to say, (for the Words are, WE bube a more fure Word of Prophecy) That the dark Prophecies of the Old Testament were a furer and more certain Evidence, than this immediate Voice of God which he heard with his own Bars Now what is Prophecy, that it should be more furely and certainly to be depended on than the immediate Voice of God? Is is possible to think that St. Peter, or any Man in his Wits could make fuch a Compaunto thee. Was this a foolith Complaintoin

But further, let us consider what Account
St. Peter himself gives of this Word of Prophery; which, we are told, is beyond Comparison

parison the best and the surest Evidence we have for our Faith: He compares it to a Light Shining in a dark Place; and distinguishes it from Day-light, and that Brightness which is usher'd in by the Day-Star. This Word of Prophecy then is here compared by St. Peter to the glimmering Light of a Candle seen at a Distance in a dark Night; which tho' it gives some Direction, yet is not this now a choice Account of the Evidence of the Gospel; nay, of the very best Evidence which we have of the Gospel? Are we still surrounded on all Sides with Darkness, affisted by one only distant glimmering Light? Was it thus that Christ came to be a Light to lighten the Gentiles, and to be the Glory of Ifrael? St. Peter in his first Epistle tells all Christians, that they are called out of Darkness into God's marvellous Light; how comes he then in this second Epistle to tell them, that they are still in Darkness, and have nothing but a Light glimmering in the Darkness to direct them? Can the same Writer possibly be supposed to give fuch different Accounts of our Gospel-State? Ask St. Paul, what State Christians are in he will tell you, That the Light of the glorious Gospel B 4

Gospel of Christ, who is the Image of God. has Shone unto them, 2 Cor iv. A. Ask the Evangelists, they will tell you, The Days foring from an high bath vifited us, to give Light to them that fit in Dankness, and in the Shadow of Death. Ask any, or all of the Ar postles, they will tell you their Commission is, To open the Eyes of the People, and to turn them from Darkness to Light; Acts xxvi.: 16. agreeably to what our Lord told bis Difciples, Ye are the Light of the World, Mat, yo 14. How different is this Account from that which St. Peter is suppos'd to give of the best Light we have under the Gospel, in contradiction to himself, and almost every Writer of the new Testament!

But let us go one Step further, and we shall find, that St. Peter in the Text is so far from speaking of the Word of Prophecy, 28 of the best Light or Evidence to be had for the Point in question, whatever it was, that he manifestly speaks of it as not the best; but as a Light to be attended to only until a better comes: Hear his Words; We have also a more sure Word of Prophecy, subsreunto ye do well that ye take beed, as unto a Light that shineth in a dark Place, until the Day dawn, and the Day-Star arise in your Hearts.

This

This Light you fee is to be attended to only till the Day light comes; so far is it from being itself the best Light, that it must give way to a better. What the true Import and Meaning of this is we shall see hereafter. But furely, St. Peter would not have limited any Time for their attending or the Word of Prophecy, had he been confidering, it as the best Support of Christian Faith; for in that Sense it ought ever to be attended to, and to beithe constant Employment of a Christian's Meditation, fo long as Life and Thought re-

These Reasons of suppose prevailed with Interpreters to quit the apparent Senfe of this Text, which feams to prefer the Author rity of Prophery to the Authority of all other Evidence, whereby the Doctrine of the Golgelis confirmed and to feek for forme other more conformable to Truth and Reafon But however they agreed in ren jecting this Senie, they are far, from being

agreed in establishing any other

-mol)

The Greek Expositors Suppose the Sense here to be, That Prophecy is men, to us Chri-Stians, a more fure and convincing Evidence than even it, was, having been verified and established by the Events. This Interpreta-

but then it places the Comparison where St. Peter has not placed it. He manifestly compares the Evidence of Prophecy to the Evidence arising from the Glorification of Christ attested by those who delivered what they had heard and seen with their own Eyes and Ears: But of the Evidence and Weight of Prophecy before and after the Completion he says nothing. Grotius thought this Sense the most convenient, and has adopted it in his Commentary on the Place.

Others * suppose that the Comparative is used in this Text, in the Seuse of the Positive, to express the great Certainty of the Evidence mentioned. According to them, the Meaning is, "That we have a very sure Evidence in the Words of Prophecy!" This Exposition introduces a new Use of Language into the Text, for which having no sufficient Authority to produce, it can claim no Authority itself. The Instances given to support this Construction, as far as I have seen, are not pertinently assent.

Others, preferving the natural Signification of the Words, and therefore admitting the Comparison, will not however allow the

[.] Erasmus, Junius and Tremellius.

Compatison to be absolute, but only relative; relative to the Opinions and Prejudices of the Jews, to whom this Epiftle was directed. According to this Interpretation, the Apostle does not affert. That Prophecy is in itself a better Argument than the Evangelical Evidence, but only that it is better to fews; who being educated in an Effect and Reverence for the Prophets from their Childhood and being but new and tender Converts to the Gospel, had a much greater Regard to the Authority of their own Prophets, than to the Testimony of the Apostles. But as to this Exposition ; in the first place, there is nothing in the Text to countenance it : In the nest place; had this been St. Peter's Meaning he never would have spoken in the first Person, and joined himself in the same Opinion with his Country-men : WE bave, fays he, a more sure Word of Prophecy -- Now whatever the Jews thought, St. Peter could not think that the ancient obscure Prophecies. and which he compares immediately to a Light fining in a dark Place, were a stronger Evidence than the Miracles of Fesus, and the Attestation of God himself to the Truth of his Miffion This therefore could not be St. Peter's Meaning of ent at all all all of deelared Thefe

12 DISCOURSE L

These are the most considerable Expositions, which have been given of this Paffage. Tis evident that all Interpreters have been fensible of the Absurdity of setting up Prophecy as a superior Evidence to all other Gospel Evidence; and that to avoid this Difficulty, they have been driven to feek out other Meanings And yet without all Queftion, the Words of the Text, according to their most natural Sense, do import, that the Evidence of Prophecy is a furer Evidence than that before mentioned; which was the Apostle's own Testimony of the Glory of Christ, which he had feen with his Eyes and of the Voice of God declaring Ghriff to be his beloved Son; of which the Apoftle was an Ear-witness in the Mount. But as natural as this Sense is, yet they who conclude from hence, that Prophecy is a better Evidence of the Million of Christ and the Truth of the Gofpel, than any other Evidence draw a Conclusion which the Text will not justify. For look back and see what is the Thing to be proved by this more fure Word of Prophecy is it the Miffion of Christ ? St. Peter fays nothing of it. Is it the Truth of the Gofpel? nothing left. MThe Apostle tells us in the 16th Verse That God declared

declared Christ by a Voice from the excellent Glory, to be his beloved Son: But this is not the Thing he would prove, for he brings this Declaration to prove something else: And this Declaration is considered as one of the Proofs to which he compares the Word of Prophecy.

To clear this Matter, let us confider what it is that St. Peter intended to prove; for without knowing this, 'tis impossible to judge of the Comparison in the Text; for in some Cases Prophecy is no Proof, in others it may be our very best Evidence, notwithstanding that it is a glimmering Light, faintly shining through the Dark.

The second Epistle of St. Peter was written to support and maintain the Hopes and Expectations which he had raised in his first, as will be evident upon a Comparison of the two together. To the first Epistle therefore we must go, to see the Foundation and Rise of the Matter to which this consoverted Text in the second relates.

The Christians, to whom the first Epistle was directed, were in a State of severe Trial and Persecution; They were for a Season in Heaviness, ibrough manifold Temptasions, i. 6. They were spoken against as evil Doers, it 12.

iii, 16.

iii. 16. iv. 4. They fuffered for Righteousness fake, iii. 14. They were reproached for the Name of Christ, iv. 14. and were made Partakers of bis Sufferings, ver. 13. This being the Case, the Apostle administers suitable Advice to them: He calls upon them to arm themselves with the same Mind which was in Christ, who suffered for us in the Flesh, iv. I. he bids them account it their Happiness that they were reproached for the Name of Christ, iv. 14. and rejoice that they were Partakers of bis Sufferings, ver. 13. He reminds them that this fiery Trial was no firange or furprizing Event; but what had been foretold, and what they had Reason to expect, iv. 12. And that the fame Afflictions were accomplished in their Brethren in the World, v. o. That the Time was come (foretold before) That Judgment must begin at the House of God, iv. 17.

Together with these Admonitions he gives them Assurance of a certain Deliverance near at Hand. He tells them they were kept by the Power of God, through Faith, unto Salvation, ready to be revealed, i. 5. That their Trial would yield Honour and Glory at the Appearing of Jesus Christ, ver. 7. He hids them have perfect Hope and Considence in

the

the Grace, or Deliverance, to be brought at the Revelation of Christ Jesus, ver. 13. in the Day of Visitation, ii. 12. For the Certainty of this Deliverance, and Salvation now ready (or prepared) to be revealed, and of the Share they should have in it, he appeals to the ancient Prophets, and the Spirit of Christ in them, testifying before-band the Sufferings of Christ, and the Glory which should follow, i. II. Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themfelves, but unto us they did minister the things now reported unto you, ver. 12. The first Scene, the Sufferings of Christ, being over, iv. 1. his Glory was ready to be revealed, which would bring them exceeding Joy, iv. 13. and be to the Destruction of their Persecutors, the Ungodly, and the Sinners, ver. 18. All these Hopes were founded in this,

All these Hopes were founded in this, That Christ himself had already received Glory and Power, and would return in his Glory and Power to save true Believers. Our Trust in God is by St. Peter built upon this, that God raised him (Christ) from the Dead, and gave him Glory, 1 Pet. i. 21. And it is at the Revelation of this Glory, that Christians are taught to expect exceeding Joy, iv. 13. You see now how much Weight is laid by St. Peter in his first Epistle upon the Expec-

16 DISCOURSE I.

Expectation of Christ's Conting in the Power and Glory of God.

It is very probable that the diffrested Chriflians conceived at first great Hopes from these Assurances given them by an Apostic of Christ, and expected (as it is natural for Men in Affliction to do) that every Day would bring their Deliverance with it But when one Year after another passed, and no Deliverance came; when the Scoffers began to ridicule their Hopes, and afked in Meckery, Where is the Promise of his Coming? 2 Pet. iii. 3, 4. their Hearts grew fick , and their Hopes deferred, inflead of being any Comfort or Support to them, became an Addition of Grief, and filled them with Fears and Suspicions, left they had believed in vain. Many of them, worn out with Diftress and Persecution, began to give way, and willingly liftened to the corrupt (Teachers) who instructed them to keep fair with the World, and to keep their Faith to themfelves; by means of which wicked Doctrino they were led away, and fell from their Stedfallness, 12 Epychapelis ver. 17 and to avoid suffering, denied the Lord that bought them. chi iii wenisti/ danar word won ool no'Y

ON Persy in his fact De his upon the

serie:

DISCOURSE I. 17

In this State of Things, and at the Diftance of five or fix Years from the writing of the first Epistle, the Apostle sends his second Letter; and it answers in every Point to this Account, In the first Chapter the Apostle endeavours to re-establish and confirm the Hopes of Believers; but he does it with the Air of one who had been reproached for his Doctrine; We bave not, fays he, followed cunningly devised Fables, when we made known to you the POWER and COMING of the Lord Jesus, chap. i. ver. 16. You see here again the true Point upon which St. Peter placed the Hopes and Expectations of true Believers. In the fecond Chapter he takes notice of the false Teachers who brought in damnable Herefies, denying the Lord that bought them; these he threatens with swift Destruction, ver. 1. and tells them, That, however they might conceive of the Promise of Christ's speedy Coming, yet they would affuredly find, that their own Judgment did not linger, nor their own Damnation Sumber, ver. 3. that it would have been better for them not to have known the Way of Righteousness, than after they have known it to turn from the boly Commandment delivered to them, ver. 21. In the third and last Chapter he confiders the Scoffers, and their irreligious Infult, Where Where is the Promise of his Coming? vet. 4. He enters into their Argument, and shews them from what had already happened in the World, how perversely they reasoned about suture Things. He concludes the whole with proper Cautions to Christians, when they consider and endeavour to understand the Times and Seasons of God's Judgments; and guards, not only his own, but St. Paul's Doctrine upon this Article, the Coming of Christ, (so much was his Mind bent to clear this one Point) against the perverse Use of the Unlearned and Unstable, ver. 15, 16.

You see now what is the main, the only great Point, in this fecond Epistle; it is the Coming of Christ in Power and Glory, to deliver the Faithful, and to take Vengeance of the Ungodly and Unbelievers, as forefold by the Prophets under both Testaments. But this Coming of Christ was future, and at a Distance; and depended entirely (as to any Knowledge that could be had of it) upon the Authority of Prophecy: For which Reason St. Peter refers, in his first Epistle, to the antient Prophets, and to the inspired Preachers of the Gospel, to justify the Hopes he raised; of which Salvation, or Deliverance, fays he, the Prophets have enquired and fearched diligently, who prophefied of the Grace that flould

come unto you, chap. i. 10. which Things are now reported unto you by them that have preached the Gospel unto you, with the Holy Ghost sent down from Heaven, ver. 12. And for the same Reason in his second Epistle he refers again to Prophecy, as being of all others (and in Things of Futurity it needs must be) the most sure Evidence.

This Account of St. Peter's Epistles is indeed not mine, but his own: For he tells us expressly, that his Intention in both his Epistles was, to make them, to whom they were sent, mindful of the Words which were spoken before of the boly Prophets, he adds, and of the Commandments of us the Apostles of the Lord and Saviour: 2 Ep. iii. 1, 2. That this latter Part relates to the same Subject as the former, will appear by comparing it with the Passage just before quoted, 1 Ep. i. 12 where St. Peter considers the Apostles, as Prophets, or Expounders of the Prophets, under the Assistance of the Holy Chost, preaching those very Things which the antient Prophets had testified beforehand.

Take this Key along with you, and fee how it will open this fo much perplexed Paffage of Scripture now under Confideration: The Apostle's Reasoning to the faithful Believers is this, We have not followed cunningly devised Eables,

n

e,

i-Id

16

20 DISCOURSE I.

Fables, when we made known unto you the Power and Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were Eye-witnesses of his Majesty. For he received from God the Father Honour and Glory, when there came such a Voice to him from the excellent Glory, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. And this Voice which came from Heaven we heard, when we were with him in the holy Mount. We have also a more sure Word of Prophecy, 2 Ep. i. 16, &c.

It is evident that the POWER and COMING of our Lord Jesus Christ is the only Point here in question; not a Word is there relating to any other Fact or Doctrine of the Gospel. To prove this Point, the Apostle tells them he had been an Eye-witness of his MAJESTY OF GLORY. Whilst our Saviour lived on Earth, his Condition was mean, and his Fortune low; this was a great Prejudice against him in the Opinion of the Jews, who expected greater Things from their Redeemer, and could not eafily hope to fee him return in Glory and Power, who lived and died so meanly and so miserably. 'Tis a fufficient Answer to all such Prejudices, to prove, that, mean as he appeared, he had a real Majesty, and was actually invested with Honour and Glory from God the Father.

But this Evidence manifestly extends but to one part of the Point in question, to shew that Christ had bimself been glorified; what is there then to shew that he will ever return again in this Glory and Power? For allow all this to be true, might an Objector fay; yet how does it prove the Hopes you would raise of his speedy Return in Power and Glory to deliver his Servants, and to take Vengeance of his Foes? For what is past we willingly take your Word; you are a competent Witness of what your Eyes beheld, and of what your Ears beard: But will your feeing him in Glory on the Mount fome Years ago, necessarily infer, that he shall come again in Glory some Years. bence; and that too, to execute the very Purposes you declare? Can any Certainty, as to future Events, be collected from past Events? Or, can any thing we fee this Year, affure us what will happen to us the next?

'Tis true, (we may suppose the Apostle to answer) all future Events are in the Hands of God; to him only are they known, and from him only can they certainly be learn'd. All other Arguments in this Case can amount only to Probabilities and Presumptions; and a great Presumption 'tis that Christ shall come in Glory, that we have already seen him glorified; and it is a further Evidence of his

İ

22 DISCOURSE I.

Power to deliver his Servants, fince God has openly declar'd him to be his well-beloved Son: But to affure us, that he will indeed fo come, and so use his Power, we have a more sure Word of Prophecy: i. e. we have the very Word of God, (speaking by his Prophets) to whom all Futurity is known, to assure us of

the Certainty of this future Event.

This Interpretation, as it is easy and natural in itself, and renders to every Expression in the Text its proper and usual Signification: so it is necessary, I conceive, to the Apostle's Argument, and plainly enforc'd by the Context, and stands clear of all Difficulties. Here is no Pretence to fay, that Prophecy is a better Argument for the Truth of the Gospel, than all the Miracles of Christ and his Apostles; for the Truth of the Gofpel is not the Point here in question. St. Peter speaks only of the Coming of Christ in Power, and of a Salvation ready to be revealed; which being yet to come, admitted of no furer Evidence than the Word of Prophecy; which yet, he tells us, was only as a Light shining in a dark Place : But the Gospel was not a Thing ready to be revealed, it had long fince been reveal'd; the Gospel was not a Light Shining in a dark Place, but, as he himself expresly calls it, a marvellous Light, into which they had been call'd out of One Darkness, I Ep. ii. 9.

One Word more, and I have done with this Subject: The more fure Word of Prophecy here mention'd, is not to be understood merely of the Prophecies of the Old Testament, for it may refer to the Prophecies of the New, and probably does, as appears by St. Peter's appealing, not only to the antient Prophets, but also to the Preachers of the Gospel. How unhappily then was this Text made choice of, to set up antient Prophecy in Opposition to the Gospel Evidence, since the Prophecy here intended is probably itself a Gospel Evidence, and so far from being superior to all the Miracles of Christ and his Aposles, that it owes all its Authority to them.

The giving Light to this Passage will surnish us with an Answer to one Objection raised against the Authority of this second Epistle of St. Peter. The learned Grotius judg'd from some Characters which he observed in it, that this second Epistle was penn'd after the Destruction of Jerusalem; before which St. Peter was dead. But 'tis very evident that the Author of this second Epistle speaks of Christ's Coming in Power and Glory, in the very manner which St. Peter speaks of it in the first Epistle, and indeed with no other View than that of justifying what was deliver'd in the first Epistle. If by the Sal-

d

0

l

t,

LS

of

10

C 4

vation

vation ready to be revealed, and the Day of Visitation, and Appearing of Jesus Christ, in the first Epistle, we are to understand the Apostle as referring to the Destruction of Jerusalem then near at hand, we must necessarily in the second Epistle understand the same Thing by the Power and Coming of our Lord Which Power and Coming was at the Time of writing the fecond Epistle, fo far from being over, that it is treated as a Thing to come; and for the Certainty of which St. Peter had no better Evidence than the Word of Prophecy: Or, if any other Coming of Christ is to be understood in this fecond Epistle, the same must be understood in the first: for the second is but a Vindication of the Doctrine of the first. And no Notion common to both Epiftles can be an Objection against the second, since the first was never doubted of in the Church. And indeed, whoever reads the two Epiftles, and compares them carefully, will fee fuch a Concern in the second to support the Sentiments of the first, that he will be inclin'd to think that the second Epistle could come from no other Hand but that which penn'd the first.





DISCOURSE

\$P\$

ET us proceed to confider the. Character which St. Peter gives of Prophecy, and the Degree of Evidence which we may reafo-

nably expect from it. Prophecy is a Light shining in a dark Place, and we do well to give beed to it until the Day dawn. St. Peter's Meaning is this, "The Time will come " when the Things you hope for shall be

" placed in a clear Light, when you shall see

" all your Expectations fully justify'd in the

" Accomplishment; in the mean while ye

" do well to attend to Prophecy, tho' but a

" small glimmering Light, and shining at a

" Distance in a dark Place, yet the best

" you have, or can have at present." Metaphorical Expressions and Similitudes ought not to be rigidly and strictly canvassed; 'tis

fufficient

I shall endeavour to confirm this Proposition by the Authority of Scripture; and to suggest some Observations which may be of use, when we are called upon to judge of the Nature of Prophecy, and the Evidence aris-

ing from it.

Whether Prophecy be a clear Evidence before the Completion, or no, is no Matter of Controversy; so far from it, that they who tell us Prophecy is the best Argument even for Christianity, do not yet think it a clear one. But without Regard to any Man's Opinion, it will be proper to see what Notion the inspired Writers themselves had of the Word of Prophecy.

If we look into the first Epistle of St. Peter, we shall find that the antient Prophecies, of which he speaks in the Text, and which he stiles the more sure Word of Prophecy, were not apprehended or clearly understood by

those

those inspired Persons who delivered them; for there he represents them fearthing what or what manner of Time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did fignify, when it testified beforehand the Sufferings of Christ, and the Glory that Should follow, i. 11. To the fame Purpose our Saviour speaks, Matt. xiii. 17. Many Prophets and righteous Men have defired to fee those Things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those Things which ye bear, and have not heard them. St. Paul gives the like Account of the Gift of Prophecy under the Gospel Dispensation: We know in part, and we probefy in part: but when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away. Now we fee thro a Glass darkly; but then Face to Face: Now I know in part, but then Shall I know even as also I am known, 1 Cor. xiii. 9, 10, 12. Now if the Prophets and righteous Men of old, to whom the Word of God came, did not clearly understand the Things which they foretold, but employed themselves in searching and examining the prophetical Testimonies of the Spirit which was in them; if the Prophets of the New Testament knew only in part, and prophefied only in part, feeing but darkly as through a Glass; 'tis most evident that others,

others, in all Appearance less qualified than they to understand the determinate Sense of the Prophecies, cou'd have but a confused and indistinct Notion of the Things foretold.

The Prophet Daniel after a very extraordinary Vision, which he reports in his last Chapter, immediately adds, I heard, but I understood not: then said I, O my Lord, what shall be the End of these Things? And be faid, Go thy Way, Daniel: for the Words are closed up and sealed till the Time of the End. Answer here given to Daniel, is very like the Answer which our Saviour gave the Apostles, upon a like Enquiry made by them: They ask, Lord, wilt thou at this Time restore again the Kingdom to Ifrael? And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the Times or Seasons which the Father hath put in his own Power, Acts i. 6, 7. It did belong to them undoubtedly, and to every believing Jew, to give beed to the Word of Prophecy, according to St. Peter's Exhortation in the Text; and fince it did not belong to them to know the Times and Seasons, 'tis evident the Word of Prophecy was not intended to give a clear and distinct Light in this Case.

These last Passages relate to such Prophecies especially, as seem to design the Times

and

DISCOURSE II. 29

and Seafons of God's Working. And thefe Predictions being oftentimes delayed in the Accomplishment much beyond the Expectation of those to whom they were delivered, it brought the Prophets and their Predictions frequently into Contempt; and gave the People occasion to harden themselves against the Fears and Apprehensions of the Evils threatned. Hence came the Reproach upon the Prophets, taken notice of by Ezekiel, The Vision that he seeth is for many Days to come; and be prophefieth of the Times that are far off, xxii. 27. Which Speech grew up into a Proverb: What is that Proverb that ye have in the Land of Ifrael, faying, The Days are prolonged, and every Vision faileth, 22. The Case is very much the same in regard to other Prophecies. Whoever looks into the prophetical Writings, will find that they are generally penned in a very exalted Stile, full of bold Figures describing the Judgments or the Mercies of God; representing spiritual Blessings under the Images of temporal Prosperity, and oftentimes fuch Images as cannot possibly admit of a literal Interpretation. In which Case, tho' we may see the general Intent and Meaning, and find fufficient Ground for Hope and Fear from the Scope of the Pro-

30 DISCOURSE II.

phecy, yet we can with no Certainty fix the precise and determinate Manner in which the Words are to be fulfilled.

Prophecy is, by the Author of Prophecy. thus described: I have multiplied Visions, and used Similitudes by the Ministry of the Prophets; Hosea xii. 10. Which Similitudes are elsewhere spoken of as dark Speeches delivered to the Prophets in Visions and in Dreams. Numb. xii. 6, 8. For this Reason the Jews, when they spoke with Contempt of their Prophets, were used to say, Doth he not speak Parables? Ezek. xx. 49. Our Saviour seems to speak of the antient Prophecies under the fame Character: Know ye not, fays he to his Disciples, this Parable? and how then will ye know all Parables? Mark iv. 13. That is, if ye understand not this plain Parable of the Sower, how will ye understand all the antient Prophecies relating to the Gospel, which are much harder Parables?

These Passages are sufficient to prove, that Prophecy was never intended to be a very distinct Evidence, and to shew St. Peter's Meaning in comparing the Word of Prophecy to a Light shining in a dark Place, and in making this Evidence so much inferior to the Evidence we are to receive, when the Fulness of

DISCOURSE III. of Time comes for the Manifestation of

God's Promises.

But allowing this to be the Case of Prophecy at the Time of Delivery, are we not however to expect to find the Prophecy clear and distinct, and exactly corresponding to the Event, whenever the Event comes into Existence? and consequently, is it not abfurd after an Event is come to pass, to apply any antient Prophecies to it, that do not manifeftly, to the Eyes of common Sense, appear to belong to it? These Questions being admitted, another will be asked: How comes it to pass, that many of the Prophecies, applied by the Writers of the Gospel to our Saviour and his Actions, are still dark and obscure; and so far from belonging evidently to him, and him only, that it requires much Learning and Sagacity to thew even now the Connection between some Prophecies and the Events?

In answer to these Questions, we must observe, That the Obscurity of Prophecy does not arise from hence, that it is a Relation or Description of semething future; for tis, as eafy to speak of Things suture plainly and intelligibly, as it is of Things past or present. The same Language serves in both Cases with Peace

little

32 DISCOURSE II.

little Variation. He who says the River will overflow its Banks next Year, speaks as plainly as he who says it did overflow its Banks last Year. It is not therefore of the Nature of Prophecy to be obscure, for it may easily be made, when he who gives it thinks fit, as

plain as History.

On the other Side, a figurative and dark Description of a future Event, will be figurative and dark still when the Event happens; and confequently will have all the Obscurity of a figurative dark Description, as well after as before the Event. The Prophet Isaiab describes the Peace of Christ's Kingdom in the following manner: The Wolf Shall dwell with the Lamb, and the Leopard shall lye down with the Kid, and the Calf, and the young Lion, and the Fatling together, and a little Child shall lead them, xi. 6. No body, I suppose (some modern Jews excepted) ever understood this literally; nor can it now be literally applied to the State of the Gospel; it was and is capable of different Interpretations: It may mean temporal Peace; and that, either publick of Kingdoms and Nations, or private among the Professors of the Gospel. It may prefigure an internal and spiritual Peace, the Tranquillity of Mind which fets a Man at Peace

Peace with God, himfelf, and the World. But whatever the true Meaning is, this Prophecy, expounded by the Rules of Language only, does no more obtrude one determinate Sense upon the Mind fince the coming of Chrift, than it did before. But then we fay, the State of the Gospel was very properly prefigured in this Description, and is as properly prefigured by an hundred more of the like kind, and fince they all agree in a fak Application to the State of the Colpel, we firengly conclude, that the Gofpel State was the Thing foretald under these and many other like Expressions. So that the Argument from Prophecy for the Truth of the Gospel does not rest upon this, that the Event has necessarily limited and accertained the particular Sente and Meaning of every Prophecy; but in this, that every Prophecy has in a proper Sense been compleated by the coming of Christ. Tis abfurd therefore to expect clear and evident Conviction from every fingle Prophecy applied to Christ, the Evidence must arise from a View and Companifon of all together.

9

d

19

y

te

ıy

30

at

CE

Prophecies are not all of one Kind, or of equal Clearnes: The most literal Prophecies relating to Christ were not always at the Time

D

of the Delivery the plainest; for many of these relating to the most surprizing and wonderful Events under the Gospel, wanted not the Veil or Cover of figurative Language; for being plainly foretold, they cou'd hardly, for the feeming Incredibility of the Things themselves, be received and admitted in their true literal Meaning. A Virgin shall conceive a Son, was a Proposition which seem'd to want some other Interpretation than a literal one, which was inconfiftent with all Experience of the World; And therefore probably this Prophecy was not understood by the antient Yews, as importing a miraculous Conception. The Event has not made this Prophecy clearer than it was before; the Language of it was as well understood in the Prophets Time as now; but common Sense led every Man to understand it in a Sense agreeable to Nature and Experience: But the Event has shew'd us, that the plain literal Sense, however inconsistent with the Experience of Nature, is the true Sense. In like manner the Prophecies from which the Refurrection of Christ is inferred, were obscure and dark from a seeming Inconfistency between the several Parts of them. It is foretold that Christ should be despised and rejected of Men, a Man of Sorrow and

and Affliction; that his Affliction shou'd purfue him even to the Grave; and 'tis also foretold that notwithftanding these Sufferings, and a wreiched Death, he shou'd protong bis Days, and have an everlalling Kingdom, and fee the Work of the Lord prosper in his Hands, These Prophecies are not at all plainer now than they were in the beginning: But the plain Sense appeared at that Time loaded with Contradictions; here was one born to Mifery and Affletion, and yet he was the Heir of an evenlasting Kingdom: Hewas condemned, executed, laid in the Grave, and after all this he was to prolong his Days, and fee the Work of the Lord profper in his Hands. The Reforrection of Christ reconciled all thele Difficulties and feeming Inconfiftencies; and we now readily admit these Prophecies in their plain literal Sense; I which was a very plain Sense before, tho's very hard one to be imagined Obku ity of antient Prophecies; wbayailado yo

t

3,

C

is

nt

n.

er

as

W;

:I-

nd

115,

fi-

he

ies

in-

ing

of

de-

row

and

tarive

You may observe then, that the most literal Prophecies have received the greatest Confirmation, and the most Light from the Ewent. For the Difficulty in this Case not lying in the Darkness or Obscurity of the Expression, but in the seeming Impossibility of the Thing foretold, such seeming Impossibility

D:

lity

can make a figurative or metaphorical Expression to be a plain or a literal one; or restrain the Language of any Prophecy to one determinate Sense only, which was originally capable of many.

I have said thus much to show what fort of Clearness and Evidence we ought to expect from Prophecies after their Accomplishment: 'Tis a great Prejudice against this Argument, when Men come to it expecting more from it than it will yield. This they are led to by hearing it often said, That Prophecy, however dark and obscure at first, grows wonderfully plain upon the Accomplishment: Which in some Cases, as I have shewn, is in Fact true; but is not, cannot be so in all Cases.

You may think it perhaps strange, that I should be here pleading, as it were, for the Obscurity of antient Prophecies; whereas for may very well conceive it would be more to the Purpose of a Christian Divine to maintain their Clearness. Now as Moses in another Case said, I would to God all the Lord's People were Prophets; so say I in this Case, I would to God all the Prophecies of the Lord were manifest to all his People. But it matters little what

what we wish for, or think best; we must be content with such Light and Direction as God has thought proper to bestow on us: And to enquire why the antient Prophecies are not clearer, is like enquiring why God has not given us more Reason, or made us as wise as Angels: He has given us in both Cases so much Light, as he thought proper, and enough to serve the Ends he intended.

It is, doubtless, a Mistake to conceive Prophecy to be intended folely or chiefly for their Sakes in whose Time the Events predicted are to happen. What great Occasion is there to lay in fo long beforehand the Evidence of Prophecy to convince Men of Things that are to happen in their own Times; the Truth of which they may, if they please, learn from their own Senfes? How low an Idea does it give of the Administration of Providence, in fending Prophets one after another, in every Age from Adam to Christ, to imagine, that all this Apparatus was for their Sakes who lived in, and after the Times of Chrift, with little regard to the Ages to whom the Prophecies were delivered? As I think the Pro-phecies of the New Tellament are chiefly for our Sake, who live by Faith and not by Sight; to I imagine the antient Prophecies had the like Use, and were chiefly intended

11

0 6 6

0

الر

le

at

D 3

38 DISCOURSE OIL

World. Had it been otherwise, a Set of Prophecies given some few Years before the Birth of Christ, would have served our Purpose as well as a Series of Prophecies given from the very beginning, and running thro' every Age.

Let us then confider the Use of Prophecy; and this will help us to conceive the Degree of Clearness which ought to attend it. Some People are apt to talk, as if they thought the Touth of some Facts, recorded in the Gospel, depended upon the Clearness of the Prophecies relating to them: They speak, for Instance, as if they imagin'd the Certainty and Reality of our Saviour's Resurrection were much concern'd in the Clearness of the Prophecies relating to that great and wonderful Event, and feem to think that they are confuting the Belief of his Refurrection, when they are trying to confound the Prophecies But can any thing be more relating to it. abfurd? For what Ground or Pretence is there to enquire, whether the Prophecies foreshewing that the Messiah should die and rise again, do truly belong to Fesus, unless we are first satisfied, that Jesus dy'd and rose again? We must be in Possession of the Fact, before we can form any Argument from

P

th

from Prophecy: And therefore the Truth of the Resurrection, consider'd as a Fact, is quite independent of the Evidence or Au-

thority of Prophecy.

1

e

-

41

ip Y

es

re

19

ies nd

less

ind

the

ent

om

wonk

The Part which Unbelievers ought to take in this Question, if they would make any Use of Prophecy, should be to shew from the Prophets, that Jesus was necessarily to rise from the Dead; and then to prove, that in Fact Jesus never did rise: Here would be a plain Consequence. But if they do not like this Method, they ought to let the Prophecies alone; for if Jesus did not rise, there is no Harm done if the Prophets have not fore-told it: And if they allow the Resurrection of Jesus, what do they gain by discrediting the Prophecies? The Event will be what it is, let the Prophecies be what they will.

There are many Prophecies in the Old Testament relating to the Babylonish Captivity, and very distinct they are, describing the Ruin of the holy City, the Destruction of the Temple, the carrying the Tribes into a distant Country, and the Continuance of the Captivity for Seventy Years. Can you suppose these Prophecies intended to convince the People of the Reality of these Events when they should happen? Was there any Danger

D 4

they

they should imagine themselves safe in their own Country, when they were Captives at Babylon, unless they had the Evidence of Prophecy for their Captivity? Or, that they thould think their Temple flanding in all its Glory, when it was ruin'd before their Eves? If the Supposition be abserd in this Case, it is so in every Case; for the Argument from Prophecy is in all Instances the fame. 'Tis plain then, that Matters related in the Gofpel do not depend for their Reality upon the Evidence of Prophecy; they may be true, tho' never foretold, or very obscurely fores told; nay, they must be admitted as true, before we can fo much as enquire whether any Prophecy belongs to them.

But if this be the Case, that we must admit all the Facts of the Gospel to be true, before we can come at the Evidence of Prophecy, what Occasion have we, you'll say, to enquire after Prophecy at all? Are not the many Miraeles of Christ, his Resurrection from the Dead, his Assension to Heaven, the pouring forth the Gifs of the Spirit upon the Apostles, their speaking with Tongues, and doing many Wonders in the Name of Christ, sufficient Evidence to us of the Thusbook the Gospel, without troubling ourselves to know

know whether these Things were foretold, or in what Manner they were foretold? To answer this Question plainly, I think foch Facts, once admitted to be true, are a compleat Evidence of the divine Authority of a Revelation: And had we known no more of Chrift, than that he claimed to be attended to as a Person fent and commission'd by God, he needed no other Credentials than these already mentioned; and it would have been impertinent to demand what Prophet foretold his coming. For in a like Cafe, who foretold the coming of Mofes to be a Lawgiver to Ifrael? God had promised Abraham to give his Posterity the Land of Ganaan; but that he would give it by Mofes he had not promited; that he would talk with him Face to Face, and deliver his Law to him, and by him to the People, he had not foretold: The Authority therefore of Mofes, as a divine Lawgiver, stands upon the miraculous Works perform'd by him; and the wonderful Attestations given to him by the Presence of God in the Mount, in the Eyes of all the People; but upon Prophecy it does not stand, for of him there were no Prophecies. This thews that Prophecy is not an Evidence effen-

1

C:

1

4

D

8, 7

ď:

H

W

tial to the Proof of a divine Revelation; for it may be spared in one as well as another.

But the Case of the Gospel differs from that of the Law; for though the Law was not prophefy'd of, yet the Gospel was; he who delivered the Law was one of the first who prophefy'd of the Gospel, and told the People fo long beforehand, That God would raife a Prophet like unto him, whom they must bear in all Things: By which Prediction he guarded the People against the Prejudice which his own Authority was like to create against a new Lawgiver; telling them beforehand that when the great Prophet came, their Obedience ought to be transferred to him. The fucceeding Prophets speak more fully of the Office, Character, Sufferings, and Glory of the Saviour of Ifrael, and the Defire of all Nations. Now one of the Characters, which our Saviour constantly assumes and claims in the Gospel, is this, That he is the Person spoken of by Mofes and the Prophets. Whether he is this Person or no, must be try'd by the Words of Prophecy; and this makes the Argument from Prophecy fo far necessary to establish the Claim of the Gospel; and it has been very justly, as well as acutely observed. that the Proof of this Point must rely entirely

on the Evidence of Prophecy. Miracles in this Case can afford no Help; if the Prophets. have not spoken of Christ, all the Miracles in the World will not prove that they have spos ken of him. * wallada U wallawiyano yot wan sh

These Considerations thew how far the Gospel is necessarily concerned in prophetical Evidence. Christ has done the Works which no Man ever did, and given the fullest Evidence of a Divine Commission; but he claims to be the Person foretold in the Law and the Prophets: And as Truth must ever be confiftent with itself, this Claim must be true, or it destroys all others. This is the Point then to be tryed on the Evidence of Prophecy: 10 Christ that Person described and foretold under the Old Testament, or no? Whether all the Prophecies relating to him be plain, or not plain: Whether all the Ways used by the Yews of arguing from the Old Testament, be convincing to us, or no, it matters little: The fingle Question is, Is there enough plain to shew us that Christ is the Person foretold under the Old Testament? If there is, we are at an end of our Enquiry, and want no further Help from Prophecy; especially since we, to use St. Peter's Expression, bave in this Grounds and Reasons, p. 31.

I am not now speaking of the great Advantage that may be made of prophetical Bvidence for convincing Unbelievers of the Truth of the Gospel; but am considering how far the Truth of the Gospel necessarily depends upon this kind of Evidence. These are two very different Enquiries. It is necessary for us to shew that Christ is the Person promis'd to be a Saviour to Ifrael; and when we have shew'd this, no Opposer of the Gospel has more to demand. But we may carry our Enquiries much further; we may contemplate all the Steps of Providence relating to the Salvation and Redemption of Mankind in the feveral Ages of the World, and by a Comparison of all the Parts, may discern that Christ was indeed the End of the Law, and of all Promises made to the Fathers: That all the Deliverances given by God to his People were but Shadows, and as it were an Earnest of the great Deliverance he intended to give by his Son: That all the Ceremonials of the Law were Representations of the Substance of the Gospel: That the Aaronical Sacrifices and Priefthood were Figures of better Things to come. But these Enquires do not stand in the

the Rank of Things to be necessarily prov'd to every Believer; they do not enter into the Principles of the Doctrine of Christ, as the Apostle to the Hebrews expressly tells us; but belong to those who go on to Perfection: Which Distinction given by the Apostle in the fifth and sixth Chapters to the Hebrews, is well worth considering, as being a Key to open the true Use of all typical and allegorical Applications of Scripture.



DISCOURSE

DISCOURSE IL

in Standard of the contraction o



The or may him docking

The straight of the same of the

The transfer of the design

and the second second second

The Mary Committee Committ

santional Committee Spanish



will be sobel won A del

die die die die die die die die die



T is necessary to take this Matter higher, to look back to the Rise and Progress of divine Prophecy, and to observe what Ends the Wisdom of

God intended to serve by Means of it. 'Tis no Commendation of Prophecy to say that 'tis very dark and obsence; nor yet can it be a Reproach, provided it answers all the Ends design'd by Providence. To enable ourselves therefore to judge of Prophecy, we must enquire to what End Prophecy was given; and this is the Subject I now propose to your Consideration.

It will not be faid, because it cannot be maintain'd, that we have any Right to the Knowledge

Knowledge of Things future. God is not oblig'd either in Wisdom or Goodness, and much less in Justice, to declare to us the Things which shall be hereafter. In regard therefore to the Knowledge of Futurity, whether it be little, or much, or nothing that God thinks fit to communicate to us, we can have no reason to complain; for having no Right, we can pretend no Injury. Since therefore we have no Demand on God for this fort of Knowledge in any degree whatever, 'tis evident that whenever we have it, we must afcribe our having it to some special Reasons of Providence, which Reasons alone can limit the Degree of Light and Knowledge which ought to attend upon the Word of Prophecy; for if we have from Prophecy fo much Light as fully answers the End of giving the Prophecy, I would fain know upon what Reafon we can form a Complaint for want of more? I mean this, to thew how abfurd it is for Men to take Counfel of their Curiofity when they confider the Use and Weight of Prophecy; in this View they will find nothing to satisfy them; they may go on for ever asking, Why are we not told more, or more distinctly? Which Questions we may promise to answer, whenever they inform us upon

upon what Right they demand to be told any thing; which if they cannot do, all such Complaints must be laid aside, and we must come to the only proper and material Consideration, What End did the Wisdom of God propose to serve by the antient Prophecies, and how has this End been served by them?

" By Prophety Funderstand all the Decla" rations which God has made concerning
" the future State of Mankind in this World,

or in the next; consequently all the Hopes and Expectations which are grounded on

"God's Promises, and do not result from "Reason and natural Knowledge, I refer to

Prophecy, as their Original." If there be any other kind of Prophecy not comprehended in this Description, there may be perhaps, before we take Leave of this Subject, a proper Place to consider it, but at present I shall confine myself within the Limits of this Description.

It cannot be supposed that God has delivered Prophecies only to satisfy or employ the Curiosity of the Inquisitive, or that he gave his Spirit to Men merely to enable them to give forth Predictions for the Amusement and Entertainment of the World; there must be some End intended worthy of the Author.

E

50 DISCOURSE IIL

What End can you conceive worthy of God, but the Promotion of Virtue and Religion, and the general Peace and Happiness of Mankind? These Things belong to him, as Creator and Governor of the World; these

Things are his Province.

Tis true, you'll say, these Things do belong indeed to God; but what has Prophecy to do with these Things? God can govern the World without letting us into his Secrets; and as for Virtue and Religion, and our own Happiness, he has given us a plain Law to walk by, the Result of that Reason and Knowledge with which he has endowed us. Prophecy can never contradict or over-rule the Light of Reason and Nature, nor can we suppose that we came so imperfect and unfinished out of the Hands of our Creator, as not to have Light enough to see our own Duty, and to pursue our natural Happiness, but to want at every Turn an Admonisher at our Elbow.

Let us allow the original State of Nature to be as perfect and complete as you defire.

But what if the Case should be altered? how will Matters stand then? 'Tis no unreasonable Supposition, this; for since Man was created a moral Agent, with Freedom of Will, it was possible for him to fall, and conse-

consequently, possibly he may bave fallen. Let' us suppose for the present this to be the Case, and tell us now, from Natural Religion, what must such Sinners do? REPENT, you'll say; for it is agreeable to the Goodness of God to accept Repentance, and to reffore Offenders to his Favour. Very well; but how often will this Remedy ferve? May Sin and Repentance go on for ever in a perpetual Round? To allow this, differs nothing from allowing a Liberty and Impunity to fin without Repentance. If God is Governor and judge of the World, there must be a Time for Judgment; and Men may, after all reatonable and equitable Allowances made, be ripe for Judg-ment: Let this be the Case then? Suppose a Man, after all equitable Allowances made, to be condemned under and by the Law of Nature, and living in daily Expectation of Exewould advise him to in the mean time? — Natural Religion? — To what Purpose? — He has had his Trial and Condemnation by that Law already, and has nothing to learn from it but the Milery of his Condition. I do not mean that the Sense of Natural Religion will be loft in fuch a Man. He may fee, per haps more clearly than ever he did, the Difference Work

ference between Good and Evil, the Beauty of moral Virtue, and feel the Obligations which a rational Creature is under to his Maker: but what Fruit will all this Knowledge yield? what certain Hope or Comfort will it administer? A Man with a Rope about his Neck may fee the Equity and Excellency of the Law by which he dies; and if he does, he must see that the Excellency of it is to protect the Virtuous and Innocent; but what is this Excellency to him who has forfeited the Protection of all Law? If you would recommend Natural Religion exclusively of all other Affistance, 'tis not enough to shew from Principles of Reason the Excellency and Reasonableness of moral Virtue, or to prove, from the Nature of God, that he must delight in and reward Virtue; you must go one Step further, and prove from the Nature of Man too, that he is excellently qualified to obey this Law, and cannot well fail of attaining all the Happiness under it that ever Nature designed for him. If you ftop fhort at this Confideration, what do you gain? What imports it that the Law is good, if the Subjects are so bad, that either they will not or cannot obey it? When you prove to Sinners the Excellency of Natural Religion, you only thew them how

how justly they may expect to be punished for their Iniquity: A sad Truth, which wants no Confirmation! All the possible Hope left in such a Case is, that God may freely pardon and restore them; but whether he will or no, the Offenders can never certainly learn from Natural Religion.

Should God think fit to be reconciled to Sinners, Natural Religion would again become the Rule of their future Trial and Obedience; but their Hopes must flow from another Spring, their Confidence in God must, and can arise only from the Promise of God; that is, from the Word of Prophecy; for which Reason Prophecy must for ever be an effential Part of such a Sinner's Religion.

This Reasoning agrees exactly with the antientest and most authentic Account we have of the Beginning of Prophecy in the World. When God had finished all his Works, and Man the Chief of them, he view'd them all, and behold they were very good. How long this Goodness lasted we know not; that it did not last very long is certain. During the Time of Man's Innocence there were frequent Communications between God and him, but not the least Hint of any Word of Prophecy delivered to him. The Hopes of

tous of attary

E 3

Nature

Man had before him the Prospect of all that Happiness to which he was created, to encourage and support his Obedience. In this State Natural Religion wanted no other Affistance, and therefore it had no other.

But when the Case was altered by the Transgression of our first Parents, when Natural Religion had no longer any sure Hopes or Comforts in reserve, but less them to the fearful Expectation of Judgment near at hand; when God came down to judge the Offenders, and yet with Intention finally to rescue and preserve them from the Ruin brought on themselves; then came in the Word of Prophecy, not in Opposition to Natural Religion, but in Support of it, and to convey new Hopes to Man, since his own were irrecoverably lost and extinguished in the Fall.

The Prophecy then given being the first, and indeed (as I conceive) the Ground-work and Foundation of all that have been fince, it well deserves our particular Confideration.

t

ti I

It may be expected perhaps that the Way should be cleared to this Enquiry, by removing first the Difficulties which arise from the historical Narration of the Fall, and could

could any thing material be added in Support of what is commonly faid upon this Subject, the Time and Pains would be well placed: But the more and the oftner this Cafe is confidered in all its Circumstances, the more will the commonly received Interpretation prevail; which is evidently the true antient Interpretation of the Fewish Church, as appears by the Allusions to the History of the Fall, to be met with in the Books of the Old Testament.

c

0

Lakers.

To some Unbelievers, if I mistake not their Principles, the History of the Fall would have been altogether as incredible, tho' perhaps not quite so diverting, had it been told in the fimple and plainest Language.

'Tis to little purpose therefore to trouble them with an Account of the Genius of the Eastern People, and their Language; for you may as foon persuade them that a Serpent tempted Eve, as that any evil Spirit did. If alk, why the Devil might not as well fpeak to Eve under the Form of a Serpent, as give out Oracles to the old Heathen World under that and many other Forms? you gain nothing by the Question; for Oracles, whether Heathen or Jewish, are to them alike; they dispute not their Authority, but their Reality. This

E 4

56 DISCOURSE IH.

This is a Degree of Unbelief which has no Right to be admitted to debate the Question now under Consideration.

As to others, who are not Infidels with regard to Religion in general, vet are shock'd with the Circumstances of this History. I desire them to consider, that the Speculations arising from the History of the Fall, and the Introduction of natural and moral Evil into the World, are of all others the most abstruce and furthest removed out of our Reach: That this Difficulty led Men in the earliest Time to imagine two independent Principles of Good and Evil, a Notion destructive of the Sovereignty of God, the Maintenance of which is the principal End and Design of the Mosaic History. Had the History of Man's Fall plainly introduced an invisible evil Being, to confound the Works of God, and to be the Author of Iniquity, it might have given great Countenance to this Error, of two Principles: or, to prevent it, Mofes must have writ an History of the Angels Fall likewise; a Point, I suppose, to which his Commission did not extend, and of which perhaps we are not capable Judges; and fince this Difficulty might in a great measure be avoided, by having recourse to the common Usage of the Eastern

Eastern Countries, which was, to clothe History in Parables and Similitudes, it seems not improbable that for this Reason the History of the Fall was put into the Dress in which we now find it.

The Serpent was remarkable for an infidious Cunning, and therefore stood as a proper Emblem of a Deceiver; and yet being one of the lowest of the Creatures, the Emblem gave no Suspicion of any Power concerned that might pretend to rival the Creator.

This Method has not so obscured this Hiflory, but that we may with great Certainty come to the Knowledge of all that is necesfary for us to know. Let us confider the History of Moses, as we should do any other antient Eastern History of like Antiquity: Suppose, for Instance, that this Account of the Fall had been preserved to us out of Sanchoniatho's Phanician History: We should in that Case be at a Loss perhaps to account for every Manner of Representation, for every Figure and Expression in the Story; but we should foon agree that all these Difficulties were imputable to the Manner and Cuffons of his Age and Country; and should shew more Respect to so venerable a Piece of Antiquity, than to charge it with Want of Sense, because

we did not understand every minute Circumstance: We should likewise agree, that there were evidently four Persons concerned in the Story; the Man, the Woman, the Person represented by the Serpent; and God. Disagree we could not about their several Parts. The Serpent is evidently the Tempter; the Man and the Woman the Offenders; God the Judge of all Three; The Punishments inslicted on the Man and Woman have no Obscurity in them; and as to the Serpent's Sentence, we should think it reasonable to give it such a Sense as the whole Series of the Story requires.

"Tis no unreasonable Thing surely to demand the same Equity of you in interpreting the Sense of Moses, as you would certainly use towards any other antient Writer. And if the same Equity be allowed, this plain Fast undeniably arises from the History: "That Man was tempted to Disobest dience, and did disobey, and forfeited all "Title to Happiness, and to Life itself; that "God judged him, and the Deceiver likewise under the Form of a Serpent." We require no more; and will proceed upon this Fast to consider the Prophecy before us.

The Prophecy is Part of the Sentence passed upon the Deceiver; the Words are these;

I will put Enmity between thee and the Woman, and between thy Seed and ber Seed : It shall bruife thy Head, and thou shalt bruife bis Hoel: Gen. iii. 1 5. Chriftian Writers apply this to our bleffed Saviour, emphatically. Stiled here the Seed of the Woman, and who came in the Fullness of Time to bruife the Serpent's Head, by destroying the Works of the Devil, and reftoring those to the Liberty of the Sons of God, who were held under the Bondage and Captivity of Sin. You'll fay, What upreasonable Liberty of Interpretation is this? Tell us, by what Rules of Language, the Seed of the Woman is made to denote one particular Person, and by what Art you discover the Mystery of Christ's miraculous Conception and Birth in this common Expression? Tell us likewife, how bruifing the Serpent's Head comes to fignify the defroying the Power of Sin, and the Redemption of Mankind by Christ? 'Tis no Wonder to hear such Questions from those who look no further than to the third Chapter of Genefis, to fee the Ground of the Christian Application. As the Prophecy stands there, nothing appears to point out this particular Meaning; much less to confine the Prophecy to it. But of this hereafter. Let us for the present lay aside all our own Notions, and go back to that State and

end Condition of Things, which was at the Time of the Delivery of this Prophecy, and fee (if haply we may discover it) what God intended to discover at that Time by this Prophecy, and what we may reasonably suppose our first Parents understood it to mean.

They were now in a State of Sin, standing before God to receive Sentence for their Disobedience, and had Reason to expect a full Execution of the Penalty threatened, In the Day thou eatest thereof, thou Shalt furely die. But God came in Mercy as well as Judgment, purposing not only to punish, but to restore Man. The Judgment is awful and fevere; the Woman is doomed to Sorrow in Conception; the Man to Sorrow and Travel all the Days of his Life; the Ground is curfed for his fake; and the End of the Judgment is, Duft thou art, and unto Duft thou shalt return. Had they been left thus, they might have continued in their Labour and Sorrow for their appointed Time, and at last returned to Dust, without any well-grounded Hope or Confidence in God: They must have looked upon themselves as rejected by their Maker, delivered up to Trouble and Sorrow in this World, and as having no Hope in any other. Upon this

Foot, I conceive, there could have been no Religion left in the World; for a Sense of Religion wirhout Hope, is a State of Phrenzy and Distraction, void of all Inducements to Love and Obedience, or any thing else that is praise-worthy. If therefore God intended to preserve them as Objets of Mercy, it was absolutely necessary to communicate so much Hope to them, as might be a rational Foundation for their future Endeavours to reconcile themselves to him by a better Obedience. This feems to be the primary Intention of this first divine Prophecy; and it was necessary to the State of the World, and the Condition of Religion, which could not possibly have been supported without the Communication of fuch Hopes. The Prophecy is excellently adapted to this Purpose, and manifestly conveyed fuch Hopes to out first Parents. For let us confider in what Senfe we may suppose them to understand this Prophecy. Now they must necessarily understand the Prophe cy, either according to the literal Meaning of the Words, of according to such Meaning as the whole Circumstance of the Transaction, of which they are a Part, does require. If we suppose them to understand the Words literally, and that God meant them fo to be under-

understood, this Passage must appear ridicus lous. Do but imagine that you fee God coming to judge the Offenders; Adam and Eve before him in the utmost Distress; that you hear God inflicting Pains and Serrows and Mifery and Death upon the first of human Race; and that in the midft of all this Scene of Woe and great Calamity, you hear God foretelling, with great Solemnity, a very trivial Accident that should sometimes happen in the World: That Serpents would be apt to bite Men by the Heels, and that Mon would be apt to revenge themselves by stake ing them on the Head, What has this Trifle to do with the Lofs of Mankind, with the Corruption of the natural and moral World and the Ruin of all the Glony and Happiness of the Creation Great Comfort it was to Adem, doubtless, after telling him that his Days should be shortand full of Misery and his End without Hope, to let him know, that he should now and then knock a Snake on the Hend, but not even that, without paying dear for his poor Victory, for the Snake Thould often bite him by the Heel w Adam, furely, could not understand the Prophecy in this Sense, the some of his Sons have so derstood it; a plain Indication how muc more -inbuu

more some Men are concerned to maintain a literal Interpretation of Scripppre than they are to make it fpeak common Senfe. Leaving this therefore as absolutely absurd and ridiculous, let us confider what Meaning the Circumftances of the Transaction do necessarily fix to the Words of this Prophecy. Adam tempted by his Wife, and the by the Serpent, had fallen from their Obedience, and were now in the Prefende of God expecting Judge ment. They knew full well at this Juncture, that their Fall was the Kittory of the Serpent whom by Experience they found to be an Enemy to God and to Man; to Man whom he had ruined by feducing him to Sin; to God, the noblest Work of whose Creation he had defaced. It could not therefore but be fome Comfort to them to hear the Serpent first condemned and to fee that he wever he had prevailed against them, he had gained no Victory over their Maker, who was able to affert his own Honour, and to punishithis great Author of Iniquity. A By chis Mathod of God's Proceeding they were fecured from thinking that there was any evil Being equal Stolthe Creator in Power and Dominion : An Opinion which gained Ground in Aftertimes, thro' the Prevalency of Evil: And it, usifi where

where it does prevail, destructive of all true Religion. The Condemnation therefore of the Serpent was the Maintenance of God's Supremacy; and that it was fo understood, we have, if I mistake not, a very antient Testimony in the Book of Yob: With God is Strength and Wifdom, the Deceived and the Deceiver are his; i. e. equally subject to-his Command, Job xii. 16. The Belief of God's fupreme Dominion, which is the Foundation of all Religion, being thus preferved, it was ftill necessary to give them such Hopes as might make them capable of Religion toward God. These Hopes they could not but conceive, when they heard from the Mouth of God that the Serpent's Victory was not a complete Victory over even themselves; that they and their Posterity should be enabled to contest his Empire; and the they were to fuffer much in the Struggle, yet finally they should prevail and bruise the Serpent's Head, and deliver themselves from his Power and Dominion over them. What now could they conceive this Conquest over the Serpent to mean? Is it not natural to expect that we shall recover that by Victory, which we loft by being defeated? They knew that the Enemy had fubdued them by Sin, could they then

b

fe

L

b

P

A

W

then conceive Hopes of Victory otherwise than by Righteoufness? They lost thro' Sin the Happiness of their Creation, could they expect less from the Return of Righteoufiels than the Recovery of the Bleffings forfeited? What else but this could they expect? For the certain Knowledge they had of their Loss when the Serpent prevailed, could not but lead them to a clear Knowledge of what they should regain by prevailing against the Seprent. The Language of this Prophecy is indeed in part metaphorical, but 'tis a great Mistake to think that all Metaphors are of uncertain Signification; for the Defign and Scope of the Speaker, with the Circumstances attending, create a fixed and determinate Sense. Were it otherwise, there would be no Certainty in any Language; all Languages, the Eastern more especially, abounding in Metaphors to Astinger

Let us now look back to our Subject, and fee what Application we are to make of this Instance.

D

y.

0,0

A

E

7

en

This Prophecy was to our first Parents but very obscure; it was, in the Phrase of St. Peter, but a Light shining in a dark Place: All that they could certainly conclude from it was, that their Case was not desperate; that

some Remedy, that some Deliverance from the Evil they were under, would in Time appear; but when, or where, or by what Means, they could not understand: Their own Sentence, which returned them back again to the Dust of the Earth, made it difficult to apprehend what this Victory over the Serpent should fignify, or how they, who were shortly to be Dust and Ashes, should be the better for it. But after all that can be urged upon this Head, to fet out the Obscurity of this Promise, I would ask one Question. Was not this Promise or Prophecy, tho' furrounded with all this Obscurity, a Foundation for Religion and Trust and Confidence towards God after the Fall in hope of Deliverance from the Evils introduced by Disobedience? If it was, it fully answered the Necessity of their Case, to whom it was given, and manifested to them all that God intended to make manifest. They could have had towards God no Religion, without fome Hopes of Mercy: It was necessary therefore to convey fuch Hopes; but to tell them how these Hopes should be accomplished, at what Time and Manner precisely, was not needfary to their Religion. And what now is to be objected against this Prophecy? It is very obseure

t

V

1

f

n

ti

to

to

fo

obscure you say; so it is; but it is obscure in the Points which God did not intend to explain at that Time, and which were not necessary to be known. You see a plain Reason for giving this Prophecy, and as far as the Reason for giving the Prophecy extends, so far the Prophecy is very plain: 'Tis obscure only, where there is no Reason why it should be plain; which furely is a Fault eafily to be forgiven, and very far from being a proper Subject for Complaint.

tt

ir k

it

er 10

ld

be

n-

e-

y, 12

n-

pes

by red

Pas

od

246

me

ore

WO

hat 21

to

Hery

יוער

But if this Prophecy conveyed to our first Parents only a general Hope and Expectation of Pardon and Restoration, and was intended by God to convey no more to them, how come we their Posterity to find so much more in this Promise than we suppose them to find? How is it that we pretend to discover Christ in this Prophecy, to see in it the Mystery of his Birth, his Sufferings, and his final Triumph over all the Powers of Darkness? By what new Light do we discern all these Secrets, by what Art do we unfold is a necessiry Kellon to be given smeds

Tis no Wonder to me, that fuch as come to the Examination of the Prophecies applied to Chrift, expecting to find in each of them fome express Character and Mark of Christ,

F 2

plainly

plainly to be understood as such antecedently to his Coming, should ask these, or many other the like Qustions; or that the Argument from antient Prophecy should appear so slight and trivial to those who know no better Use of it.

Known unto God are all bis Works from the Beginning; and whatever Degree of Light he thought fit to communicate to our first Parents, or to their Children in After-times, there is no doubt but that He had a perfect Knowledge at all Times of all the Methods by which he intended to refeue and reftore Mankind; and therefore all the Notices given by him to Mankind of his intended Salvation, must correspond to the great Event, whenever the Fulness of Time shall - make it manifest. No Reason can be given why God should at all Times, or at any Time, clearly open the Secrets of his Providence to Men; it depends merely upon his good Pleafure to do it in what Time and in what Manner he thinks proper. But there is a necessary Reason to be given why all fuch Notices as God thinks fit to give, hould answer exactly in due Time to the "Completion of the great Defign: It is abfurd therefore to complain of the antient ylaide Pro-

1

a

f

u

b

f

th

h

fi

F

yo

0

at

ft

S,

a

ds

re

æs

ed

eat

all

en

BY

VI-

his

in

ere

all

ive,

the

ab-

ient

Pro-

Prophecies for being obscure, for it is challenging God for not telling us more of his Secrets. But if we pretend that God has at length manifested to us by the Revelation of the Gospel the Method of his Salvation, it is necessary for us to shew that all the Notices of this Salvation given to the old World do correspond to the Things which we have heard and feen with our Eyes, The Argument from Prophecy therefore is not to be formed in this manner: " All the " antient Prophecies have expresly pointed " out and characteriz'd Christ Jesus:" But it must be formed in this manner: " All " the Notices which God gave to the Fi-" thers of his intended Salvation, are per-" feetly answered by the Coming of Christ." He never promised or engaged his Word in any Particular relating to the common Salvation, but what he has fully made good by fending his Son to our Redemption. Let us try these Methods upon the Prophecy before us. If you demand that we should shew you a priori Christ Jesus set forth in this Prophecy, and that God had limited himself by this Promise to convey the Blesfing intended by fending his own Son in the Flesh, and by no other Means whatever, you demand what I cannot shew, nor do I know

know who can. But if you enquire, whether this Prophecy in the obvious and most natural Meaning of it, in that Sense in which our first Parents and their Children after. might eafily understand it, has been verified by the Coming of Christ, I conceive it may be made as clear as the Sun at Noonday, that all the Expectations raised by this. Prophecy has been completely answered by the Redemption wrought by Christ Jesus. And what have you to desire more than to fee a Prophecy fulfilled exactly? If you infift that the Prophecy should have been more express, you must demand of God why he gave you no more Light; but you ought at least to suspend this Demand till you have a Reason to shew for it.

I know that this Prophecy is urged further, and that Christian Writers argue from the Expressions of it to shew that Christ is therein particularly foretold: He properly is the Seed of a Woman in a Sense in which no other ever was; his Sufferings were well prefigured by the bruifing of the Heel, his complete Victory over Sin and Death by bruifing the Serpent's Head. When Unbelievers hear fuch Reasonings, they think themselves entitled to laugh; but their Scorn be to themselves. We readily allow

that

I

i

fta

that the Expressions do not imply necessarily this Sense; we allow further, that there is no Appearance that our first Parents understood them in this Sense; or that God intended they should so understand them: But fince this Prophecy has been plainly fulfilled in Gbrift, and by the Event appropriated to him only; I would fain know how it comes to be conceived to be fo ridiculous a thing in us, to suppose that God, to whom the whole Event was known from the beginning, (+) should make choice of fuch Expressions, as naturally conveyed fo much Knowledge as he intended to convey to our first Parents, and yet should appear in the Fulness of Time to have been peculiarly adapted to the Event which he from the Beginning faw, and which he intended the World should one Day see; and which when they should see, they might the more eafily acknowledge to be the Work of his Hand, by the fecret Evidence which he had inclosed from the Days of old in the Words

(†) Remember the former Things of old, for I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like me.: declaring the End from the Beginning, and from antient Times the Things that are not yet done; faying, My Counsel shall stand, and I will do all my Pleasure, Isa. xivi. 9, 10.

The Works of the Lord are done in Judgment from the Beginning: And from the Time be made them, he disposed the

Parts thereof, Ecclus. xvi. 26.

of Prophecy. However the Wit of Man may despise this Method, yet is there nothing in it unbecoming the Wisdom of God. And when we see this to be the Case, not only in this Instance, but in many other Prophecies of the Old Testament, it is not without Reason we conclude, that under the Obscurity of antient Prophecy there was an Evidence of God's Truth kept in reserve, to be made manifest in due Time.

As this Prophecy is the first, so it is the only confiderable one, in which we have any Concern, from the Creation to the Days of Noah. What has been discoursed therefore upon this Occasion, may be understood as an Account of the first Period of Prophecy. Under this Period the Light of Prophecy was proportioned to the Wants and Necesfities of the World, and sufficient to maintain Religion after the Fall of Man, by affording fufficient Grounds for Trust and Confidence in God; without which Grounds. which could then no otherways be had but by Promise from God, Religion could not have been supported in the World. This Prophecy was the Grand Charter of God's Mercy after the Fall; Nature had no certain Help for Sinners liable to Condemna-

tion; her Right was loft with her Innocence: It was necessary therefore either to destroy the Offenders, or to fave them by raising them to a Capacity of Salvation, by giving them fuch Hopes as might enable them to exercise a reasonable Religion. So far the Light of Prophecy extended. what Means God intended to work his Salvation, he did not expresly declare; and who has Right to complain that he did not; or to prescribe to him Rules in dispensing his Mercy to the Children of Men? This Prophecy we, upon whom the latter Days are come, have feen fully verified; more fully than those to whom it was delivered could perhaps conceive. View this Prophecy then, with respect to those to whom it was given, it answered their Want and the immediate End proposed by God; view it with respect to ourselves, and it answers ours; and shallwe still complain of its Obscurity?

The bringing in of *Prophecy* was not the only Change in the State of Religion occa-fioned by the Fall. Sacrifice came in at the same Time, as appears by the Course of the History; and it is hardly possible it should come in, especially at the Time it did, any otherwise than upon the Authority of Divine

Infti-

Institution. It is the first Act of Religion mentioned in the facred Story to be accepted by God; which implies strongly that it was of his own Appointment; for we can hardly suppose that such a Mark of Distinction would have been set upon a mere buman Invention. In later Times, when the Account of Things grows clearer, Sacrifice appears to be appointed by God as an Expiation for Sin; and we have no Reason to imagine that it was turned afide from its original Use. There is indeed no express Declaration of the Use of Sacrifice in Religion at its first Appearance, and yet something there feems to be in the Account that may give Light in this Matter. We read that Cain brought an Offering of the Fruit of the Ground, and Abel of the Firftlings of bis Flock, and the Fat thereof: The Lord bad Respect unto Abel and to his Offering; but unto Cain and to bis Offering be bad not Respect. Allowing the Maxim of the Jewish Church to have been good from the first Institution of Sacrifice, That without Blood there is no Remission, the Case may possibly be this; Abel came a Petitioner for Grace and Pardon, and brought the Atonement appointed for Sin; Cain appears before God as a just Perfor

Person wanting no Repentance; he brings an Offering in Acknowledgment of God's Goodness and Bounty, but no Atonement in Acknowledgment of his own Wretchedness. The Expostulation of God with Cain favours this Account; If thou dost well, Shalt thou not be accepted? And if thou dost not well, Sin lieth at thy Door: i. e. If thou art righteous, thy Righteousness shall fave thee; if thou art not; by what Expiation is thy Sin purged? It lieth still at thy Door. Add to this, that the Apostle to the Hebrews says, that Abel's Sacrifice was rendered excellent by Faith: What could this Faith be, but a Reliance on the Promises and Appointments of God? Which Faith Cain wanted, relying on his own well-doing.

If you admit this Interpretation, it plainly shews that the true Religion instituted by God has been one and the same from the Fall of Adam, sublisting ever upon the same Principles of Faith; at first upon only general and obscure Hopes, which were gradually opened and unfolded in every Age, till the better Days came, when God thought good to call us into the marvellous Light of bis Gofpel.

This Piece of History is all the Account we have of the Religion of the Ante-diluvian World: It was proper to be confidered for the Relation there is between Prophecy and the State of Religion in the World; and for this Reason also, because Sacrifice may perhaps be found to be one kind of Prophecy, or Representation of the one great Sacrifice once offered for the Sins of the World.



ral statistical flaging which were a opined and unfolded in every Arra

beer Divocame, while foul ducoil,

Windowy an other one will be a

DISCOURSE

to this thin the About to

that sale is consulted to a control of the

森中华达拉勒拉拉拉拉拉**克拉拉拉拉拉拉拉拉**

E have seen the Beginning of Prophecy, and its first Entrance into the World, and what Measure of Light and Hope it

brought with it. The next Enquiry is, to examine by what Degrees this Promise was opened and unfolded in the succeeding Ages of the World; and to trace the Methods of Divine Providence in preparing all Things for its Accomplishment.

Foundation of those Hopes, in which all the Sons of Adam have an Interest; in which the Ages yet to come, as well as the present and those already past, are concerned; we shall not wonder to find that the Administrations of Providence have had in all Ages relation to this Prophecy, and shall have, till the End of all Things brings with it the appointed Time for the full Accomplishment.

One

One thing, I presume, will be easily granted, because it cannot be easily denied; that if the antient Prophecies which concern the general State and Condition of Man with regard either to this World or the next, are indeed divine Oracles, there must be a Consistency in the whole; and how dark or obscure soever some Part of them might be at the first Delivery, and for Generations afterwards, yet must they in the Event conspire and center in that great End which was always in the View of Providence: Known unto God are all his Works from the Beginning of the World, Acts xv. 18.

Purpose of God with respect to Mankind; the Administrations of Providence, together with such further Declarations as God has thought sit to make, must needs be the best comment to help us to its Meaning up I

The Account we have of the Ante-diluvian World is very fhort, and conveys but little Knowledge to us of the Religion of these Times, or of the Hopes and Expectations then entertained: Yet something there is to shew that the Curse of the Fall was remember'd and felt during that Period; and that those who preserved a Sense of Religion, had

900

an Expectation of being delivered from the Curse; which could be grounded, as far as appears, upon nothing but the Prophecy al-

ready mentioned.

Noah was born in the eleventh Century after the Fall, and at the Time of his Birth. his Father Lamech, by the Spirit of Prophecy, declared, This same shall comfort us concerning our Work and Toil of our Hands, because of the Ground which the Lord bath

curfed, Gen. v. 19.

This Passage is a very material one, and, confidered in all its Views, will give some Light to the State and Condition of the World during this Period. We may, I think, from hence fairly collect, 1. That the Curfe upon the Ground subsisted in all its Rigonr to the Days of Lamech; and that the Work and Toil necessary to raise from the Ground a sufficient Support for Life, was a grievous and irksome Burden. There is no Reason to imagine, but that Lamech had as good a Share of the Things of the World as any other in his Time; and yet he speaks of the Labour and Toil of Life, much more like a Man reporting what he had felt, than what he had only feen. 2. That there was an Expectation in his Time, at least among those who had

not quite forgot God, of a Deliverance from the Curse of the Fall. Lamech's Prophecy does not introduce this Expectation, but is grounded upon it: He feems to speak to such as had the same common Hope with himself of a Deliverance to come; and points out to them the Child then born as the Instrument defigned by Providence to ease them of their Burden. THIS SAME Shall comfort us: i.e. This is the Seed of the Woman, the Heir of the Promise, the Effect of which shall be seen in his Time. 3. That the antient Expectation, founded on the Prophecy given at the Fall, was not of an immediate and sudden Deliverance. Above a Thousand Years were passed from the Curse to the Birth of Noab, and yet the Expectation of Deliverance continued; whereas, had the Notion been, that the Prophecy was to be immediately fulfilled, the Delay had been long enough to tire out their Patience and their Hopes. 4. That the antient Expectation was not that the World should be delivered all at once from the whole Curse of the Fall. Lamech, who so well remember'd the Lord's Curse upon the Ground, cannot be supposed to forget the greater Curfe upon Man: Dust thou art, and to Dust theu Shalt return. And yet from this Part of the Curse 100

0

tl

Γ

to

P

is

V

us

is

P

th

E

fro

en

on

I a

vai

wh

all

De

ftai

Curse he gives no Hopes of Deliverance; Noah was not that Seed who should bring Life and Immortality to Light; of him he only foretells, that he should fave them from the Labour and Toil of their Hunds; and leaves the Hopes of Deliverance from the greater Curse to stand as they did, upon the Faith of the first Prophecy. This Notion of a gradual Deliverance from the old Curse, is agreeable to all that has happened since, and to the present State of Things under the Gospel: It is frequently to be met with in the inspired Writers, particularly in St. Paul, who tells us, THE LAST Enemy that shall be destroyed is Death.

In Consequence of this Exposition of the Prediction of Lamech, it must be maintained, that the Prophecy has been verified in the Event: That the Earth has been restored from the Curse laid on it at the Fall, and now enjoys the Effect of the Blessing bestowed on Noah. There will arise many Prejudices, I am sensible, against this Notion now advanced. In the first Place, the Prophecy which was given at the Fall has been usually appropriated to Christ Jesus, and to the Deliverance we expect from him by the Restauration of Life and Immortality; and it

may

82 DISCOURSE VL

may be thought perhaps no good Service to give any other Person a Share in this Pro-

phecy.

In answer to this, I have some few Observations to offer: 1. That the Curfe of the Fall manifestly consists of several Parts: Man was doomed to a Life of Labour and Sorrow here, the Ground cursed for his Sake, and he condemned to feek his Food in the Sweat of his Brow; and after this Life ended, he was fentenced to return to the Dust from whence he was taken. 2. The Prophecy given as a Support to Man under this Curfe, mentions no kind of Deliverance particularly, but conveys a general Hope; which is limited to no one Circumstance of the Curse more than another; and is therefore naturally underfood to relate to the Whole. 3. Should there appear Reason sufficient to induce us to think that this Prophecy has already, in part, had its Completion, and that one Pert of the Curse has been already removed; it will be fo far from weakening, that it will mightily fupport and ftrengthen our Hopes of feeing the Whole removed in God's own Time. 4 It ought to be no Objection, that this Prophecy is supposed to point out more Events, or more Persons than one. This is according

fe

tl

le

fo

pi

W

ki

pr

W

pa

ehe

of

he

Ju

ing

cho

Gre

they

wer

to the Analogy of antient Ptophecies. And why may not this Prophecy mean Noab and Christ, as well as many others mean David and Christ, Solomon and Christ, tre,

0

t-://

es

he

of

ras

Ct

12

ms

n-

no

an

er-

ere

nk

ad

be

rily

ing

4

10-

nts

ing

10

Another Projudice will arise from the common Notion of the present and past State of the Earth. Instead of feeing any Alteration for the better, according to the Prophecy of Lamech. Men think they foe an Alteration for the worle in every Age: Nature feems to them to be almost spent and worn out, and less able to provide for her Children now than formerly. These are the Sentiments of the present Age, and they were so of those pasts We meet with many Reflections of this kind in grave and ferious Authors: St. Cjprian, I remember, complains that Things were fensibly grown worse even in the Compass of his own Time; that the Seasons of the Year were not to pleasant, nor the Fruits of the Earth fo delightful and refreshing as he remembered them. I wonder not at his Judgment; for Lfind myfelf every Day growing into the same Opinion. The best and the choicest Fruits served up at the Tables of the Great, have no fuch Relich as these, which they once provided for themselves when they were youngs And many there are who can

G 2

DIW

now find but few Days good enough to be abroad, who yet can remember when there were few bad enough to keep them at home. Such Observations therefore as these shew how much Men alter themselves; but they fhew nothing elfe. The sale to make

But this Prejudice has a greater Support from antient Tradition: We read of a Golden Age when Peace and Plenty reigned, when Fraud and Violence were little known. The old Writers, to whom we are indebted for this Piece of Knowledge, fet off the Story, by mixing with it great Complaint of their own Times; that Iron Age, as they call it, in which they lived. From these Authorities many have been led to think that the Curfe upon the Earth has been ever growing, and shall grow till the End of all Things.

But it ought to be confidered, that the most antient Writers, to whom we are beholden for these Accounts, lived at such a Distance of Time from the Flood, that we may very well suppose that they had little, Knowledge of any Antiquity beyond it They might well call the Times foon after the Flood antient Times, for so they were with respect to their own; and there is no

Pretence

1

17

.

1

-

:0

ct

y

00

re

IC.

W

ey

tro

ol-

d.

n.

ed

he

nte

CY

10-

iat

res

all

he

)¢-

11

WC

tle,

K

ter

ere

DO

ace

Pretence for thinking that they knew any thing of the Manner of Living before the Flood. They might possibly have some obscure Tradition of the Paradisiacal State; but if they had, they confounded it with their Golden Age, which plainly was a very different Thing. Now the Ages next the Flood afforded ground enough for this antient Tradition, without supposing any such Alterations in the State of the Earth as are commonly imagined. The Earth was in a poor Condition indeed after the Flood, if it could not afford Plenty for the few Inhabitants; and what Occasion was there for Fraud and Violence when every Man had more than enough? When Men increased and the Earth was divided in Property, the Case altered; fome had more than enough, and fome much less, and every Man grew concerned to be rich, and applied to the Arts of Fraud, or to open Violence, as they best served his Purpose. Here then is the Golden Age; and here is the Iron Age. The first happy State continued even to Abraham's Time; he and Lot were Strangers in the Land of Canaan, they had great Flocks and Herds with them; and yet what Plenty did they enjoy? When their Servants quarrelled about some Conveniencies

tel ods rol corror G 131 Melaco uc

10

86 DISCOURSE W.

in feeding their Cattle, Abraham, as if he had been Lord of the whole Soil, offers Let his Choice of the Country for his Cattle. L not the whole Land before shie? - If thou will take the left Hand, then will I go to the right; or if thou depart to the right Hand, then I will go to the left. Such a Dispute in thefe Days would be attended probably with Strife and Violence, with Fraud and Deceit, and perpetual Feuds and Animofries between the contending Parties. In Abraham's Time the very Plency the World enjoyed put an end to the Quarrel; not that the World is work now than it was antiently, but Men are now To multiplied; and the Earth to divided and fertled in Property, that private Men are not left to their Choice to fettle where they pleafe. Some small Parts of the Batth, lying near Towns, and Places of Habitation, were in Abraham's Time possessed in Property, as we learn from the Purchase which he made of a Burying-place. But he was no Purchafer of Proprietor of the Country where he fed his Cattle, and yet he mer with no Difturbance.

Setting affide therefore these Prejudices, let us examine what the Truth of the Case is, according to the best Light now remaining.

If you confult Interpreters for the Mean-

ing

in

y L

Tit

C

th

SI

th

B

th

C

W

So

th

ch

TO

an

bes

Vi

ba

CO

Vi

th

an

Ra

fay

He

L

ili

#;

I

e fe

Æ

be

be

be

be

4c

W

d

ot

È.

ar

in

ES

le

C

0

et

ing of Lamech's Prediction; some will tell you that Noab found out proper Tools and Instruments of Husbandry, which was a great Abatement to the Labour and Toil of Tillage: But of this there is no Proof; and it is much more likely, that a Descendant of Cain's was the Inventor of fuch Tools, than that Neab was. We read nothing of Neab's Skill in this way: But we read of Tubal Cain. that he was an Instructer of every Artificer in Brafs and Iron: And can it be imagined that there were Artificers in Iron so early as Tubal Cain, and no Application of the Art to the Works of Husbandry till Noab's Time? Some will tell you that Noab first invented the Art of making Wine; a Liquor that chears the Heart, and makes Men forget Sorrow and Trouble; but neither for this is there any Proof. We read that after the Flood, he began to be an Husbandman, and planted a Vineyard; but as he was not the first Hufbandman in the World, so neither can it be concluded from hence, that he was the first Vine-Dreffer.

Others are of Opinion, that there is nothing prophetical in Lamech's Declaration, and that he had no View but to the Circumstances of his own Family. He rejoiced, they fay, to see a Son born who might in Time be affift-

G.A

Ground. According to this Interpretation, Noab was so far from being marked out as the Person who should alleviate the Labour and Toil of the World, that his Father rejoiced only that he was come to take his Share of it, and to be his Fellow-Labourer. But is there any thing in this particular to Noab? Is not every Son born to affish his Father? And may not Lamech's Words be applied by every Father at the Birth of every Son? Why then is this Speech reported of Lamech only? Why is a peculiar Name, with reference to this Declaration, given to Noab, if there was no peculiar Reason for it?

The Jewish Interpreters are generally a greed to expound the Words of Lamech as importing a Deliverance to be granted from the Labour and Toil of Tillage, occasioned by the Curse on the Ground: And some of them suppose the Words to have a regard to the Restoration of the World thro' Noah and his Sons. But the Scripture itself will be our best Guide in this Case; thither let us go.

Lamech foretells that his Son Noah should comfort them concerning the Work and Toil of their Hands, because of the Ground which the Lord had cursed. When God informs Noah of

-1111

of his Design to destroy the World, he adds, But with thee will I establish my Covenant. Lamech expected, in vertue of God's Promife, a Deliverance from the Curfe of the Earth, and forefees that Deliverance would come thro' his Son. When God threatens to destroy the Earth, and compleat the Curse he had laid on it, he thinks upon his Covenant, and promises Noab the Benefit of it: What Covenant was this that had such immediate relation to the Destruction of the World? What could it be but the very Promise which Lamech saw should be made good to Noah; and which is here actually conveyed to Noab by a new Promise? The Words. I will establish my Covenant, must relate to a Covenant then subsisting, and not to a Covenant afterwards to be made; as will be evident to those who will examine the Import of this Phrase in Scripture. But to proceed:

5

n d

0

F

d

Blefings

The Flood being over, God declares, I will not again curse the Ground any more for Man's sake. It appears from this Declaration, 1. That the Flood was the Effect of that Curse which was denounced against the Earth for Man's fake, 2. That the old Curfe was fully executed and accomplished in the Flood. In confequence of which Discharge from from

OD DISCOURSE IV.

from the Curfe, a new Bleffing is immediately pronounced upon the Earth; While the Earth remaineth, Seed-time and Harvell. and Cold and Heat, and Summer and Winter. and Day and Night Shall not ceafe, Gen. viii. 22. This is called a Covenant between God and the Earth, ch. ix. ver. 12. And a Covenant with Noab and his Seed, and with every living Creature, of the Fowl, of the Cattle. and of every Beaft of the Field, ver. 8, 9, 10. and in truth a Bleffing on the Earth, is properly a Bleffing not only on Man, but on all living Creatures which subsist on the Earth: And it is with respect to this first Covenant that the Pfalmift breaks forth into the Ada miration of God's Goodness. Thy Mercy, O Lord, is in the Heavens, and thy Faithfulness reacheth unto the Clouds. Thy Righteoufness is like the great Mountains, thy Judgments are a great Deep: O Lord thou preservest MAN and BEAST: Pfal. xxxvi. 5. 60

When Adam was first formed and placed on the Earth, he had several Blessings and Privileges conserred on him by God. These were forseited by the Fall. What will you say if you see these very Blessings restored again to Noah and his Posterity after the Flood? Whether this be the Case or no, will soon appear upon a Comparison of the Blessings

Blessings given to one and the other. To Adam and Eve God said, Be fruitful and multiply, and replenish the Earth, Gen. i. 28. To Noah and his sons he says, Be fruitful and multiply, and replenish the Earth, ix. 1. To out sirst Pacents it is said, Have Dominion over the Fish of the Sea, and over the Fowl of the Air, and over every living Thing that moveth on the Earth, Gen. i. 28. To Noah and his sons it is said, The Fear of you and the Dread of you shall be upon every Beast of the Earth, and upon all that moveth upon the Earth, and upon all that moveth upon the Earth, and upon all Fishes of the Sea, into your Hand are they delivered, Gen. ix. 2.

To Adam and Eye are granted for Food, every Herb bearing Seed — and every Tree, in the which is the Fruit of a Tree yielding Seed, Gen, i, 29. Noah and his Sons have a larger Chartet — Roery moving Thing that liveth shall be Ment for you, even as the green Herb, have I given you all Things, Gen, ix. 3. The Bleffing upon the Earth at the Creation was, Let the Barth bring forth Grass and Herb yielding Seed, and the Fruit Tree yielding Fruit after his Kind, whose Seed is in itself upon the Earth, Gen. i. 11. The Bleffing after the Flood is, While the Earth remaineth, Seed-time and Harvest shall not cease, Gen.

viii. 22. In the Beginning, The Lights in the Firmament were appointed to divide the Day from the Night, and to be - for Seafons, and for Days and Years, Gen, i. 14. After the Flood the new Bleffing is, that Cold and Heat, and Summer and Winter, and Day and Night shall not cease, Gen. viii. 22. Tell me now what is there bestowed in the first Bleslings, that is wanting in the second? What more did Adam enjoy in his happiest Days, what more did he forfeit in his worft, with respect to this Life, than what is contained in these Bleffings? If he neither had more, nor loft more, all these Bleffings you fee expresly restored to Noab and his Posterity; and can you still believe that the Curse upon the emperation becaring Seed Earth remains?

All this laid together amounts, I think, to this; that the old Curse upon the Ground was finished and compleated at the Deluge. And when the whole Race of Men, eight only excepted, were destroyed, the Serpent had sufficiently bruised the Heel of the Woman's Seed; and the Time was come to relieve the World with respect to this Part of the Curse so sully executed. Accordingly a Blessing is once more pronounced on the Earth; and a Covenant of temporal Prose

perity confirmed to Noab, and by him to all Mankind, making good the Prophecy of his Father at the Time of his Birth, This same

Chall comfort us, &c.

You may think perhaps that we see but little Effect of this new Blessing; that the Lise of Man is still Labour and Toil; that he still eats the Bread of Sorrow and Carefulness in the Sweat of his Brow; and that the Earth still abounds in Thorns and Thistles. Such Complaints as these are but the Effect of Prejudice: Men speak in this Case as if they thought there were no Thorns and Thistles till after the Fall, but that they were created on purpose to be a Curse; for if there were such Things (as undoubtedly there were) before the Fall, why should you expect to have them removed by the Restoration of the Earth?

For what Employment do you imagine Man was made? For a little Sleep, a little Slumber, and a little folding of the Hands to fleep? Surely this was not the Case: Even in Paradise it was Adam's Business to dress and to keep the Garden? How much Labour this required we cannot tell; some it required without doubt. After the Fall Labour increased and multiplied, and continued

Flood: And God's Promise of regular Seasons after the Flood, seems to intimate that
they were very irregular and consused before:
Which one Circumstance will account for all
the Change we suppose. What the Case was
in the old World during the Curse, may probably be collected from the Curse denounced
against Israel when disobedient: I will break
the Pride of their Power; and I will make
your Heaven as Iron, and your Earth as
Brass, and your Strength shall be spent in
vain: For your Land shall not yield her Increase, neither shall the Trees of the Land
yield their Fruits, Levit. xxxvi. 19, 20.

There are serious Writers who think that the Earth was very much damaged and rendered less fertile by the Flood: But is it not obvious to observe, that this Judgment ought to be grounded on the Knowledge not only of the present State of the Earth, but also of the State before the Flood? For whoever compares two Things together, and judges upon that Comparison, must be supposed to know them both; and yet it is certain that we know nothing of the antediluvian State, but this only, that it was a very bad one;

We meet with frequent Allusions to this Covenant with Noah in later Times, and later Books of Scripture: The Son of Sirach tells us, That an everlasting Covenant was made with him, xliv. 18. sudding Covenant of the Age was given him: For Noah was the Father of the Age, and had the Govenant of the Age after the Flood, in like manner as Christ was the Father, and brought in the new Covenant of the succeeding Age.

The Prophet Jeremiah introduces God appealing to his own Fidelity in the Execution of this first Covenant, as a Reason why he ought to be trusted and relied on for the Performance of the second. If you can break my Covenant of the Day, and my Covenant of the Night, — then may also my Covenant be broken with David my Servant, that he should not have a Son to reign over his Throne, xxxiii. 20, 21. and ver. 25. In like manner the Prophet Isaiah, This is as the Waters of Noah unto me: For as I have sworn that the Waters of Noah should no more go over the Earth; so have I sworn that I would not be wroth with thee, nor rebuke thee, liv. 9. The lxvth Psalm

Psalm seems to be a Comment upon God's Covenant with Noah: Thou makest the Outgoings of the Morning and Evening to rejoice. Thou vifitest the Earth, and waterest it: -Thou crownest the Year with thy Goodness, and thy Paths drop Fatness. - The Pastures are cloathed with Flocks; the Vallies also are covered over with Corn; they Shout for Joy, they also fing. It seems also to be with Reference to this Covenant rhat the Pfalmist appeals to God's Faithfulness in the Clouds, to his Mercy established in the Heavens, and to the Moon the faithful Witness in Heaven. Wisdom and Power and Goodness are shewn forth in the Creation, but Mercy and Faithfulness relate to God's Dealings with Men: And when we hear of his Faithfulness in the Clouds, it naturally leads us to think of his Promise for Seed-time and Harvest, for the former and the latter Rain; Things evidently depending upon the Government of the Clouds.

During the Age of this Covenant, the Character by which God was known, and applied to, was relative to this Covenant, and the Bleffings of it; — Unto God would I commit my Cause, which doth great Things and unsearchable; marvellous Things without Number; who giveth Rain upon the Earth,

and

fa

bi

T

04

R

w

th

rij

R

W

Te

for int

and sendeth Waters upon the Fields, Job. v. 8, 9, 10. Sing Praise upon the Harp unto our God, who covereth the Heaven with Clouds, who prepareth Rain for the Barth, who maketh Grafs to grow upon the Mountains. He giveth to the Beaft his Food, and to the young Ravens which cry, Pfalm cvlvii. 7, 8, 9. __ Let us now fear the Lord our God that giveth Rain, both the former and the latter, in his Seafon: He reserveth unto us the appointed Weeks of the Harvest, Jer. v. 24. To the same Purpose, and with respect to the fame Times, the Apostles Paul and Barnabas tell the People at Lystra, That God in Times past suffered all Nations to walk in their ownWays, nevertbeles be left not bimfelf without Witness, in that be did Good, and gave us Rain and fruitful Seasons, filling our Hearts with Food and Gladnefs, Acts xvi. 17. Our bleffed Saviour does likewife commend and extol the Mercy of God in the Works of this fire Covenant : He maketh bis Sun to rife on the Birt and on the Good, and fendeth Rain on the Just and on the Unjust. Which Words are directly a Comment upon the Terms of Noab's Covenant for fruitful Seafons, which were to continue without being interrupted again for the lake of Man's Iniquity;

quity; or as the Text itself expresses it, The the Imagination of Man's Heart is evil from bis Youth, Gen. viii. 21. With respect to this Covenant of temporal Bleffings given to Noab, and to the fecond Covenant of future Glory given to Chrift, must St. Paul be understood to speak, when he says, Godliness is profitable to all Things, having Promise of the Life that now is, and of that which is to come. In any other View the Words are capable of no Exposition consistent with Experience; or with the Admonitions of the Gospel, which warn the Righteous to expect Sufferings in this World: But true it is, that for Godliness-fake the Promise of the Life that now is was confirmed with Noab; and for the same Reason was the Covenant of better Hopes confirmed with Christ.

These Allusions, and many more, suppose a Restoration of the Earth after the Flood, and a new Blessing given to it in vertue of God's Covenant; and without this Supposition I know not how to account for some Passages in Scripture, which speak of the Goodness of the Earth, and the great Plenty it affords. How comes it to pass that this very Earth cursed with Barrenness, and to be a Nusery for Thorns and Thistles, is afterwards

C

to

af

R

afi

til

fee

of

D

wards represented as flowing with Milk and Honey, abounding with Oil and Wine, and every thing useful and pleasant in Life? Can you imagine this Land of Plenty to be Part of the cursed Earth, doom'd to bear Thorns and Thistles, and to weary out its Inhabitants with Toil and Labour? Yet this is the Case, if no Alteration has happened; and it will be no easy Work to reconcile these Contradictions. But if the Curse upon the Earth was expiated at the Flood; if the Earth has been once more blessed by its Creator, there wants no Art or Invention to solve this Disficulty: The Thing speaks for itself.

I will leave this Point upon these Reasons: Whether they are sufficient to establish an Opinion so contrary to the Prejudices of Mankind, I know not; they seem to me at least to be worth considering.

n

d

Ce

d,

of

j-

10

ne ty

115

ba

T-

ds

Let us confider now the State of Prophecy after the Flood, and upon what Foot the Religion of the new World sublisted.

I find no new Prophecy given to Noah after the Flood, nor to any of his Children till the Call of Abraham. The Reason of it seems to be this; the Power and Sovereignty of God were so manifestly displayed in the Deluge, and made so strong Impressions upon

H 2

the

the few Persons then alive, and came so well attested to the succeeding Generation; that Religion wanted no other Support: When Idolatry prevailed, and the World was in danger of being quite lost to true Religion, without the Interposition of God, the Word of Prophecy was renewed; as we shall find when we come to that Period.

It may feem furprizing perhaps, that after so great a Revolution in the World as the Deluge made, God should say nothing to the Remnant of Mankind of the Punithments and Rewards of another Life, but should make a new Covenant with them relating merely to fruitful Seasons, and the Bleffings of the Eatth. All that I can fay to this Difficulty, is this; I think I fee plainly a gradual working of Providence towards the Redemption of the World from the Curfe of the Fall, that the temporal Bleffings were first restored as an Earpest and Pledge of beiter Things to follow; that the Covenant of the Age given to Noah had, strictly speaking, nothing to do with the Hopes of Futurity, which were reserved to be the Matter of another Covenant in another Age, and to be revealed by him, whose Province it was to bring Life and Immortality to Light thro the Gofpel. The

b

P

of

The Law of Moses, tho' a divine Revelation, and introduced to ferve and advance the great Ends of Providence with respect to Mankind, yet being given in the Age of the first Covenant, was in all Things made conformable to it; and was founded in no other express Promises, than those of temporal Happiness and Prosperity; in no other enpress Threatnings, than those of temporal Loss and Misery. Abraham's temporal Covenant was the same in kind with Noab's. tho' much enlarged and re-established upon further Promises and Affurances: As the Curse upon the Ground for the Wickedness of Cain, was of the very same kind with the Curse of the Fall; differing from it not in Kind, but in Degree.

But tho' the first Covenant given to Noah, and the Law of Moses, sounded upon the Terms of that Covenant, contain no express Promises of suture Rewards, yet is it not to be imagined that all who lived under this Covenant were void of such Hopes and Expectations. If there were any such Hopes before the Flood, grounded upon the Prophecy consequent to the Fall, the coming in of the Flood could not destroy them; and the Covenant of temporal Blessings given to

H 3

g

l.

C

LO2 DISCOURSE IV.

Noah, was so far from superseding better Hopes, that it did mightily strengthen and confirm them. For if Noah and his Foresather's expected Deliverance from the whole Curie of the Fall, the actual Deliverance from one Part of it was a very good Pledge of a further Deliverance to be expected in due Time. Man himself was cursed as well as the Ground, he was doomed to return to Dust; and fruitful Seasons are but a small Relief, compared to the Greatness of his Loss; but when fruitful Seasons came, and one Part of the Curse was evidently abated, it gave great Assurance that the other should not last for ever.

That Noah had such Expectations himself, and transmitted them to his Posterity, seems evident from the peculiar Blessing which he bestows on Shem. Blessed, says he, be the Lord God of Shem: Canaan shall be his Servant. God shall enlarge Japhet, and he shall dwell in the Tents of Shem, Gen. ix. 26, 27. Why the God of Shem, and not the God of Japhet? As to the Behaviour of these two Sons toward their Father, it was the same; they joined in the pious Office done to him; in this respect then they were equal, and equally deserving of a Blessing; if any Preserence

H

W

th

was due to either from the Father, it was to Japhet his First-born; for so he was, tho commonly last named when the Sons of Noah are mentioned together. This being the Case, how comes Shem to be preferred? And what is the Bleffing convey'd to him? The temporal Covenant it could not be, for that was before confirmed with all the Sons of Noah. Day and Night, Summer and Winter, Seed-time and Harvest, were a common Gift to the World, bestowed, as our blessed Lord observes, on the Evil as well as on the Good. The Bleffing therefore peculiar to Shem, was no Part of the temporal Covenant; nor was it any thing in the Power of his Father to bestow; for then his elder Brother, equally obedient and respectful to his Father, must have been served before him. Of what other Bleffing Noah had any Notion, can never be imagined, unless we feek for it among the Hopes he conceived of further Deliverance from the Curfe, grounded upon the divine Promise that the Seed of the Woman should finally prevail; the Right to which Promise was conveyed to him before the Flood, With thee will I establish my Covenant, Gen. vi. 18. For Noah had not only the temporal Covenant given to him and his

H 4

Sons,

Sons, but he was also, as the Apostle to the Hebrews tells us, Heir of the Righteoufnels which is by Faith, ch. xi. 7. If this be the Cafe, then Noab's Bleffing is like unto Lamech's Prophecy; for as Lamech foresaw that Noab should receive from God the Covenant of the Earth's Restoration, so Noab foresaw, that the greater Bleffing still behind, even the Covenant that should restore Man to himself and to his Maker, should be conveyed thro' the Posterity of Shem. This accounts for the Preference given to Shem; for Noah spoke not his own Choice, but declared the Counsel of God, who had now, as he frequently did afterwards, chosen the Younger before the Elder.



DISCOURSE

the temporal Covenies eds

RESIDENT PROPERTY OF THE PROPE

DISCOURSE V.



O what Purposes the antient Prophecies were given, and upon what Foot Religion stood from the Beginning to the Restoration,

or new Establishment of the World, in Noah and his Posterity, has been already considered. We are now advancing to Times of greater Light, to clearer and more distinct Prophecies, and more nearly relating to God's great Dispensation of Mercy and Goodness towards Mankind, manifested by the Revelation of his Son. This Period begins at the Call of Abraham, and runs thro' the Law and the Prophets, ending where the Gospel of Christ Jesus commences. It contains such a Variety and Number of Prophecies, that I cannot propose to myself so large and extensive a Subject to be the Matter of short Discourses from this Place. But it may perhaps be of some Use to inquisitive Minds to suggest to them the great and general Design of Providence

dence in the Prophecies of this Period; to shew them the State of Religion during this Season; and how well the Light of Prophecy afforded to this Generation, corresponded to the State and Necessity of the Times. If in this Method of enquiring, we can arrive at the Knowledge of God's Defign in giving the Word of Prophecy to the old World, we shall the more easily discern of what Use these antient Oracles are to the present World; and how far the Truth of the Gospel, which we believe and profess, depends upon the Authority and Evidence of antient Prophecy. In order to this Enquiry, it is necessary, first, to consider the State of true Religion, and the Supports it had during this Period; for Prophecy being relative to the State of Religion in the World, we must know the one to understand the other.

How soon the World after the Deluge corrupted their Ways, and lost the Know-ledge of the one true God, and changed the Glory of the incoruptible — into an Image made like to corruptible Man, we cannot certainly know; but this we certainly know, that in Abraham's Time Idolatry had spread far and wide; and taken deep Root even in the Family of Shem, and in that Branch of

i

F

d

it particularly from which Abraham descended. This being the Case, it is highly probable that true Religion had entirely failed in the World, had not God visibly interposed to preserve such a Sense of it, as was necessary for the Accomplishment of his

great Defign to restore Mankind.

Necessary I say to this End; for most evident it is. That it was not the Intention of Providence in the Call of Abraham, or in giving the Law of Moses, to propagate or restore true Religion among all Nations of the old World; fo far from it, that the Covenant with Abraham is founded upon the Condition, not of reforming, but of destroying the idolatrous Nations in the Land of Canaan; and the Sign of Circumcision was given to separate Abraham and his Posterity from the rest of Mankind; which shews that the rest of Mankind were not called to that Covenant, of which Circumcifion was the Sign or Sacrament. Moreover the Law of Mofes was established in such Rites and Ceremonies, and many of them to be performed only in the Land of Canaan, that there is no room to suppose that it was ever intended to be a general Law for Mankind. Add to this what Paul and Barnabas tell the People at Lystra, That

That God in Times past suffered all Nations to walk in their own Ways, Acts xiv. 16. And what St. Paul says to the People of Athens, God winked at the Times of Ignorance; but now commandeth all Men every where to repent, Acts xvi. 30. And it will be most evident, that the Call of Abraham, and the Law of Moses, consequent to it, were not intended as general Calls to Mankind, but were subservient to some other View and Design of Providence.

If we consider now the whole World lost to all Sense of Religion, estranged from God, and void of all Hope towards him; and suppose one Family chosen out merely for their own sakes to be delivered from the general Corruption and Misery, without any View or Design towards the general Good of Mankind, it gives so mean, so partial a View of God, that I think no Religion can consist with such a Notion.

But if the Law of Moses was neither intended to be a general Law for Mankind, nor yet intended as a partial Favour and Benefit to the Jews only, exclusive of all Mankind, what remains, but that we must confider it as a Method of Providence working towards the great End always in View, the

genera

general Restoration of Mankind from the Curse of the Fall? As the opening of that Scene which was to bring a Bleffing upon all Nations of the Earth? Accordingly we find this to be the Cafe; when Abraham was called and received the Promises, he had Affurance given him not only of peculiar Bleffings to himself and Posterity, but likewise of a general Bleffing to be conveyed through him to all Mankind: " I will make of thee, " fays God, a great Nation, and I will blefs " thee, and make thy Name great, and thou " Shalt be a Bleffing. And I will blefs them " that blefs thee, and curje bim that curfeth thee:" Immediately it follows, " And in thee " shall all Families of the Earth be bleffed, Gen. xii. 2. 'Tis of great Importance in the present Question, to distinguish rightly these Promifes.

The Promise of temporal Prosperity to Abraham and his Posterity, is sufficiently explained in the Course of his Story; at the seventh Verse of this Chapter, God tells him he would give to his Seed the Land of Canaan; And in Chap, xv. 18, that he would give the Land unto his Seed, "from the River of Egypt" unto the great River, the River Euphrates." In the seventeenth Chapter, that "he would multiply

" multiply him exceedingly; that he should be a " Father of many Nations, and Kings should " come out of bim." These were great Promises, and great Inducements to Obedience; but, except the particular Gift of the Land of Canaan (and there were probably other Parts of the World as good as that) there was nothing in them peculiar to Abraham and his Posterity only. There were before Abrabam's Time, and have been fince, many great and powerful Nations of another Kindred; the Sons of Ham and Japhet, and those descended by other Branches from Shem, have arrived to great Prosperity, and left a numerous Issue behind them, in vertue of the common Bleffing bestowed on their Ancestors after the Flood, to whom God faid, " Be " ye fruitful and multiply, and bring forth " abundantly in the Earth, and multiply " therein; to them likewise he gave the Pro-" mise of fruitful Seasons; and sustained them with Corn and with Wine." Thus far then the Promise to Abraham was derived from the temporal Covenant established with Noah and his Sons after the Flood, in which other Nations and People had a Share as well as himself, and some of them in some Respects a much greater, as he must needs judge

F

DISCOURSE V. III

judge who knows any thing of the antient or present Empires of the East and West. But if we look forward, we shall see the Distinction between the feveral Promises grow plain, when God renews the Covenant, and limits the peculiar Bleffing of Abraham to the Son which should be born of Sarab his Wife. In the xviith of Genefis the Lord appears to Abraham, and fays, " I am the Almighty God, " walk before me, and be thou perfect; then " follows, I will make my Covenant between " me and thee, and will multiply thee exceed-" ingly, - and thou shalt be a Father of " many Nations." At the 7th and 8th Verses God promises to establish an everlasting Covenant with him and his Seed after bim, to give him and them all the Land of Canaan for an everlasting Possession, and to be their God. Here are either two Covenants, mentioned together in the Compass of a few Lines, or else the same Covenant repeated with this Difference, that in the last place it is stiled an everlasting Covenant, and the Land of Canaan is affigned for an everlasting Possession, with this remarkable Addition, that God promises to be the God of Abraham, and of his Seed after him. And this is the first time that this peculiar Character affumed by God,

b

by

d

18

d

h

h

as

ne de

ze

God, of being the God of Abraham, and of his Seed, occurs in Scripture, and it is evidently connected to the Promife of the everlasting Covenant. Which Connexion seems to be the true Foundation of our Saviour's Argument from this Expression, to prove the Resurrection of the Dead; as the Connexion of the Promise of the Land of Canaan to the everlafting Covenant, feems to be the Reafon of treating the Land of Canaan as a Type or Sign of Heaven. This Character of God. thus connected to the everlasting Covenant, is likewise a plain Intimation, that two diflinct Covenants are mentioned in this Place. and not the same repeated again. Towards the Close of this Chapter, Abraham receives an express Promise that he should have a Son by Sarab his Wife, within the Compass of a Year, and that the everlafting Covenant should be established with this Son, and his Seed after him. - Abrabam had at this Time a Son of thirteen Years old, born of Hagar the Egyptian; to whom the Angel of the Lord had appeared when the was with Child of this Son, and promised to multiply ber Seed exceedingly, that it should not be numbered for Multitude, Gen. xvi. 10. This Promise therefore of a numerous Posterity flourishing in

ŋ

"

A

ÉC

33

**

at

23

Th

eff

aı

VC

ma

an

yet

to

Po

the Earth, tho' Part of the Promise given to Abrabam, as we have feen before, is no Part of the everlafting Covenant, confirmed to Isaac, exclusively to all the natural Sons of Abraham. This appears likewise from the very Passage where this Promise is limited to Isaac: Abraham, when he received the Promise of a Son by his Wise, puts up a Petition, whatever the Occasion of it was, for his Son Ishmael; " O that Ishmael might live " before thee." To which he receives this Answer; " As for Ishmael, I have beard thee: " Behold I have bleffed bim, and will make " bim fruitful, and will multiply bim exceed-" ingly: Twelve Princes shall be beget, and I " will make him a great Nation:" Immediately it follows, " But my Covenant will I " establish with Isaac, whom Sarah shall bear " unto thee:" Can any thing be plainer to shew that the everlasting Covenant, to be established with Isaac and his Seed, was of a very different kind, from the Covenant given to Ishmael, of multiplying his Seed, of making him Father of Kings and Princes, and of raising him into a great Nation? And yet this very Covenant was given originally to Abraham; he was to have a numerous Posterity, to be Father of Kings, and of a great

great Nation. Ishmael was admitted to the Benefit of this Covenant as well as Isaac, and yet expresly excluded from that which God emphatically stiles MY Covenant, and the everlasting Covenant; an undeniable Evidence that God's Covenant with Abraham was founded on better Hopes than those of mere temporal Prosperity. This Distinction of two Covenants, in the Case of Ishmael and Isaa, made by God himself, is the Foundation of St. Paul's Argument to the Galatians: " It " is written, fayshe, that Abraham bad two Sons, the one by a bond Maid, the other by a " free Woman: But he who was of the bond "Woman was born after the Flesh; but he of " the free Woman was by Promife: Which " Things are an Allegory; for thefe are the " two Covenants:" And whoever is capable of confidering what is related concerning this Matter in the Book of Genesis, will evidently see that these are indeed two Covenants; and two fuch Covenants as fully jultify the Apostle's Reasoning upon this Point Since then the Promiles of temporal Prosperity, made to Abraham and his Seed after

sperity, made to Abraham and his Seed after him, are evidently distinct from the Subject Matter of the everlasting Covenant, made with him, and limited to Isaac and face,

and

1

C

S

bi

ħ

á

VE

to

m

fre

ful

N

fuc

lef

gre

enc

Ble

bi

g

F

ce

re

ić,

of It

ye

ond

of ich

the

ble

ing

W Ve

lul.

int.

10-

fter

rect

ade

cob,

and

and afterwards to the Tribe of Judah, and lastly to the Family of David; it remains to be confidered, what the Subject of the Covenant fo limited is. If we look back to the Call of Abraham, and the Promises which attended it, there we shall find, that after enumerating the temporal Bleffings; which were to descend from Abraham to his Posterity, one Bleffing is added, in which all the World has an Interest, and which was to be conveyed to them thro' Abraham and his Seed; " In thee, fays, God, shall all the Fami-" lies of the Earth be bleffed. Whatever Abraham understood by this, I think verily he could not understand it as his Children at this Day understand it, who expect, in vertue of the Promises made to the Fathers, to be Lords of the World, and to have Dominion over all People: A Arange Bleffing this to all Nations, that they should fall from their natural Liberty, and become subject to the Dominion of one People! None but a Jew can see the Happiness of fuch a State; the Nations of the Earth, if left to their Choice, would all refuse this great Bleffing for themselves. But before we enquire into the special Meaning of this Bleffing upon all Nations, we must see whe-

I 2

ther

ther this univerfal Bleffing to be revealed in due time, were truly the Matter of God's Special, his everlasting Covenant with Abrabam. We have feen already that Ishmael was excluded from this special Covenant, and Isaac admitted to it; we have the Covenant of God with Ishmael, and the Covenant of God as renewed with Isaac, both preserved in the Book of Genefis; and it is observable that the two Covenants, as to worldly Prosperity, are nearly the fame; but they differ in this, the Covenant with Isomael fays nothing of the Bleffing to all Nations; the Covenant with Ifaac exprelly renews this very Promise: In thy Seed Thall all the Nations of the Earth be bleffed, Gen. xxvi. 4. A plain Proof furely, that the special Matter of God's Covenant, limited from Abraham to Mac exclusive of Mhmael, consisted in the Promile of this univerfal Bleffing, to be conveyed thro Abraham and Ifaat, and their Posterity subject to the Domini to all Mankind.

f

b

b

72

V

t

th

E

S

60

CC

br

40

W

rol

We have the like Evidence from a like Case, which happened between the Children of Isaac; with this only Difference, that Isaac mae! and Isaac were born one of a bond Woman, the other of a free; but Esau and sacch were Twins of one Birth, both born of

9-

as

be

nt

of

ed

ole

0-

fer

10-

·0-

ery

of

am

ds

dac

nife

yed

rity

fit.

like

Iren

Hb-

No-

ya-n of

a free Woman: The Bleffing of Abraham was limited to Facob, and denied to Efau. Yet Esau received a temporal Bleffing from his Father, as well as Jacob. The Apostle to the Hebrews accounts it Profaverels in Efau that he fold his Birthright; it must be because he sold the Bleffing of Abraham, and the Promises of God; upon any other Account there is no room for this Charge, for it was never reckoned Profaneness to fell mere temporal Rights; nor was Efau excluded from the Benefit of the temporal Promifes by this scandalous Bargain. If Jacob was bleffed with the Dew of Heaven, and the Fatness of the Earth, and Plenty of Corn and Wine, Gen. xxvii. 28. Efau's Bleffing in this respect was not inferior; Thy Dwelling, says his Eather shall be the Fatness of the Earth, and of the Dew of Heaven from above, ver. 39. If Nations were to bow down to Jacob, ver. 29, Esou likewise was to live and prevail by his Sword, ver. 40. If Jacob's Brethren were to bow down to him, ver. 29, yet the Time would come when Efau should have Dominion, and break even this Yoke from off his Neck, ver. 40. Thus the Case stands between them, if we interpret the whole Bleffing given to Jarob, of temporal Prosperity and Dominion; but

I 3

1

t

e

1

U

B

N

b

ii

S

fa

CC

th

61

Se

th

bi

but there is great Reason to limit Part of it to the peculiar Bleffing of Abraham and Ifaac, which was undoubtedly conveyed at this Time to Jecob. The conveying the Birthright in the Family of Abrabam was conveying the special Bleffing of Abraham, which always attended upon the Birthright. This Birthright was evidently made over to 7acob, when it was faid, Be Lord over thy Brethren. The special Bleffing was in Time to be extended to all Nations, as well as to the House of Abraham, for in his Seed all the Families of the Earth were to be bleffed; and therefore in consequence of the Birthrighrit is faid to Jacob, - Let People ferve thee, and Nations bow down to thee, ver. 29. It is very evident from the whole Story of Isaac's bleffing his two Sons, that the chief Bleffing he had to bestow, fell upon Facob; and it is as plain that there are no Words to limit this particular Bleffing to Jacob, but these now under Consideration; and Isaac himself understood that he had passed away the Blessing of Abraham to Jacob in these Words, and therefore he tells Efau that the Bleffing was gone beyond Recovery, I have bleffed bin, yea, and be Shall be bleffed, ver. 33. But Efau pressed his Father for a Blessing on himself: 1/aac

DISCOURSE

C.

is

1-

7-

h

is

1-

t-

to

3e

be

d

ud

y

ſ-

e

25

W

18

C

Maac answered and said - Behold I have made bim thy Lord, and all his Brethren have I given to him for Servants; and with Gorn and Wine have I fuftained bim : And what shall I do now unto thee, my Son? ver. 37. Efau still urges his Father; Blefs me, even me alfo, O my Father. Upon this Ifaac bleffes him; and pray observe; of Corn and Wine and temporal Power he gives him a full and an equal Share: - Thy Dwelling Shall be the Patnels of the Earth, and of the Dew of Heaven from above: The only Limitation on the Bleffing is, Thou Shalt ferve thy Brother. Whatever then was peculiarly given to Jucob, was contained in the Grant, of being Lord over bis Bretbren; and what this peculiar Gift was, we may learn from Ifaac himfelf, who in the next Chapter renews the Bleffing on Jacob, and gives expresly to him and his Seed, the Bloffing of Abrabam, ver. 4. In the fame Chapter the Bleffing is renewed and confirmed by God himfelf; In thee and in thy Seed shall all the Families of the Earth be bleffed, ver. 14.

That the Regard of all Nations to the Seed in which they were all to be bleffed, should be expressed by their bowing down to bim, is no hard Figure of Speech; that even edd wordt of this 4s ni orong is adithis

this Yoke, this Superiority of Abraham's Family, should one Day be broken, as the Promise to Esau sets forth, when Jews and Gentiles should be on an equal Foot, and equally the People of God, is no more than the original Covenant contains; for the Day was to come when all Nations should be equally blessed.

If you expound this Bleffing of temporal Dominion, see how the Case will stand: Jacob is to rule over Esau; yet no sooner is the Bleffing given, but he flies his Country for fear of Esau, Gen. xxvii. 43, &c. He lives abroad for many Years; and when he returns, the Fear and Dread of his Brother returns with him: He was greatly afraid and distressed, Gen. xxxii. 7. His only Refuge in this Diftress was to God; Deliver me, I pray thee, from the Hand of my Brother, from the Hand of Esau, ver. 11. When he sends a Message to him, he stiles himself, Thy Servant Jacob, ver. 20. When he met him, be bowed himself to the Ground seven times, until he came near to Esau, xxxiii. 3. When he speaks to him, he calls him Lord; when he was kindly received by Efau, he fays, I bave feen thy Face, as tho' I had feen the Face of God, and thou wast pleased with me, ver. 10. What is there in all this to shew the Rule and

and Dominion that was given to Jacob over his Mother's Sons?

C

al

10

10

es

18,

ns li-

in

ay the

12

erbe

til

he

he

200

of

10. ule

ind

If you suppose the Prophecy, understood of temporal Dominion, to be fulfilled in the Posterity of these two Brothers, let us see how the Case stands upon this Supposition: The Family of Esau was settled in Power and Dominion many Years before Jacob's Family had any certain Dwelling-place; the Dukes and Kings of Esau's House are reckoned up, Gen. xxxvi, and the Historian tells us, These are the Kings that reigned in the Land of Edom, before there reigned any King over the Children of Israel, ver. 31. When the appointed Time was come for establishing the House of Israel, and giving them the Land and Possessions of their Enemies, the Family of Esau were, by a particular Decree, exempted from the Dominion of Israel. The Lord Spake unto Moses, - Command thou the People, faying, Ye are to pass thro' the Goast of your Brethren the Children of Esau, which dwell in Seir, and they shall be afraid of you; Take ye good beed unto yourselves therefore, meddle not with them; for I will not give you of their Land, no not so much as a Foot breadth. because I bave given Mount Seir unto Esau for a Possession, Deut. ii. 4, 5. If in the Time of

of David, they of Edom became his Servants. 2 Sam. viii. 14. yet in the Days of Yeboram did they recover again, and made a King over themselves, 2 Kings viii. 20. And in the Time of Ahaz they revenged the Affront, by finiting Judah, and leading away Captives, Chron. xxviii, 17. Can you now suppose that this Variety of Fortune between the Children of Jacob and Efau was the Thing intended, or meant to be described, when the Promise was given to Jacob, that his Mother's Children should bow down to bim? If this were the Case, Isaac needed not to be so scrupulous in preserving the peculiar Bleffing to Jacob; he might have given Efau a Share of it; and the Event would have answered.

It appears, I think, from hence, that the Blessing given to Jacob, and expressed in Words implying a Rule over his Brethren, was truly a Conveyance of the Birthright to him in the Family of Abraham; that the Birthright in Abraham's Family respected the special Blessing and Covenant given to Abraham by God; That Isaac himself calls this Right of Primogeniture in his House, the Blessing of Abraham; that God himself, in Consirmation of Jacob's Right of Primogeniture, assured him, that in his Seed all the Families of the Earth shall be blessed.

Now

Now this Promise being the only special Promise made to Isaac and Facob in Preference to their Brethren, and in consequence of God's everlasting Covenant limited to them, this Promise must necessarily be understood to be the Subject-Matter of the everlasting Covenant: And it is very observable that this Blefling fo peculiarly belongs to this Covenant, that it is never mentioned with respect to any other Person whatever, than such only, to whom the Right of this Covenant, and the Promise of the Land of Canaan descended. Some Interpreters have imagined that these Words require no higher a Sense than this, that all Nations should see the Prosperity of Abraham and his Seed so evidently, that they should bless themselves and others in some such Form as this; God make thee as great as Abraham, and his Seed. But can we imagine that God's evenlasting Covenant, as he himself calls it, was given only to produce a proverbial Form of Speech in the World? That the Prerogative of Isaac above Ismael, of Jacob above Esau, lay in this only, that the Nations should use the Name of one in their mutual good Wifhes. and not of the other? Besides, when was this ever the Cafe, when did all Nations thus blefs

bless themselves, or when was there Occasion for it? The Posterity of Ishmael was established in Power much sooner, and were as great and successful for many Ages as the fews, and much larger Empires have sprung from them: So that there was hardly ever any ground to take up this proverbial Speech, which some make to be the Whole of this special Covenant limited from Abraham to

Haac and Facob.

What diffinct Notion Abraham had of the Bleffing promised to all Nations thro' him. and his Seed, what he thought of the Manner and Method by which it should be effected, we cannot pretend to fay. But that he understood it to be a Promise of restoring Mankind, and delivering them from the remaining Curse of the Fall, there can be little doubt. He knew that Death had enter'd by Sin; he knew that God had promifed Victory and Redemption to the Seed of the Woman: Upon the Hopes of this Restoration the Religion of his Ancestors was founded; and when God, from whom this Bleffing on all Men was expected, did expresty promife a Bleffing on all Men, and in this Promife founded his everlasting Covenant, what could Abrabam else expect but the Completion in

his Seed of that antient Promise and Prophecy, concerning the Victory to be obtained by the Woman's Seed? The Curse of the Ground was expiated by the Flood, and the Barth restored with a Blessing, which was the Foundation of the temporal Covenant with Noah; a large Share of which God exprefly grants to Abraham, and his Posterity particularly, together with a Promise, by their Means, to bring a new and further Bleffing upon the whole Race of Men. Lay these Things together, and say what less could be expected from the new Promife or Prophecy given to Abraham, than a Deliverance from that Part of the Curfe still remaining on Man, Duft thou art, and to Duft thou fhalt return? In vertue of this Covenant Abraham and his Posterity had Reason to expect that the Time would come when Man should be called from bis Duft again: For this Expectation they had his Affurance who gave the Covenant, That he would be their God for ever. Well might our Saviour then tell the Sons of Abraham, that even Mofes at the Bufh fhew'd the Resurrection of the Dead, when he calleth the Lord, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.

To preserve these Hopes in the World,

upon

upon which the Restoration of the World to Life and Immortality depended, was Abrabam called from his own Country and Kindred, then tainted with Idolatry, to be a Witness to God and his Truth. Had he, with all the rest of Mankind, been suffered to continue in Idolatry, the Knowledge of God had been loft, and the Remembrance of his Providence in creating Man at first, of the Hopes given of a fecond and better Creation after the Fall, had utterly perished. Abraham was not called merely for his own Sake, much less were his Posterity, a stubborn and stiffnecked People, preserved for their own Sakes; but he was called, and they preserved to be Instruments in the Hands of God, for fulfilling the Purposes of his Mercy, in the Reftoration and Redemption of the World. The great Article of the Covenant, limited to Abraham and his chosen Seed, most evidently regarded the whole Race of Man, and was to grow, in the Fulness of Time, into a Bleffing upon all the Nations of the Earth: He and his Posterity were Depositories of these Hopes, or to use the Words of St. Paul, this was the Jews chief Advantage above others, " That unto them were committed the " Oracles of God."

This

This Account will help us to a diffinct View of the Prophecies, relating to this Pefilld of Time of which we are speaking. As two Covenants were given to Abraham and his Seed; one a temporal Covenant, to take place, and to be performed in the Land of Canaan; the other a Covenant of better Hopes, and to be performed in a better Country; fo are the Prophecies, given to Abraham and to his Children after him, of two Kinds; one relative to the temporal Covenant, and given in Dacharge and Execution of God's temporal Promiles; the other relative to the Iphitual Covenant, given to confirm and &-Hablish the Hopes of Puturity, and to prepare and make ready the People for the Reception of the Kingdom of God.

Many of the antient Prophecies relate to both Covenants; and hence it comes to pais, that at the first Appearance many of the antient Predictions seem to be hardly confistent with themselves, but to be made up of Ideas, which can never unite in one Person, or in one Event. Thus the Promites to David of a Son, to succeed in his Throne, have some Circumstances, which are applicable only to Solomon, and the temporal Dominion over the House of Israel; some, which are pecu-

liar to that Son of David, who was Heir of an everlasting Kingdom, which was to be ekablished in Truth and Righteousness. Hence it is, that we often find the Promises of temporal Felicity, and temporal Deliverances, raised so high, that no temporal Felicity or temporal Deliverance can answer the Description; the Thoughts and Expressions of the Prophet naturally moving from the Bleffings of one Covenant, to the Bleffings of the other, and sometimes describing the inconceivable Glories of one Covenant, by Expresfions and Similitudes borrowed from the more fensible Glories and Bleffings of the other The Prophet Isaiab, being fent to raise the drooping Spirits of Abaz and the House of David, threatned at that Time with immediate Ruin by two potent Enemies, could not but remember the double Promise of a Kingdom given to David, which was a double Security for the Establishment of his House, together therefore with the Affurances and the Signs given of temporal Deliverance, he intermixes the Affurance and the Sign of the greater Deliverance, beforethe Completion of which the House of David could not fail, for that House should continue till the Virgin - conceived and brought forth Immanuel, that Son

P

i

o

th

25

th

of

th

un

in

Ce

vd

vei

ref

Ti

DO

AD(

Ti

Pag

om

DISCOURSE 1 129

Son of David, to whom the everlafting King dom was promised. Ought it to be Matter of Wonder, that the Prophets, who were Minifters of both Covenants, entrusted with the Counsels of God for the Direction of the temporal Affairs of the People of Ifrael, and commissioned to cherish the Hopes and Expocations of a better Kingdom, to be given in vertue of God's everlasting Covenant; ought it to be wondered as I fax, that they often fpeak of both Kingdoms together, that they make use of the temporal Deliverances as an Argument to encourage the Hopes of the spirituals When in tenth the temporal Deliverances, being the actual Performance of one Covenant, were a great Security for the Performance of the other, and it was ungeniral to see the Hand of God perform ing one Promise, and not to reflect upon the Certainty of his performing the pther.

The Bleffings belonging to the special Corvenant, given to Abraham and his Saed, were reserved to be revealed in God's appointed Time. The Raphets under the Law could not be commissioned to deplay these Bleffings apenly and nakadly, without anticipating the Time of their Repelation. Hoperit is that the Predictions connerning Christiand his King-

n

dom,

dom, are clothed in such Figures, as were proper to raise the Hope and Attention of the People, without carrying them beyond the Bounds of Knowledge prescribed by God to the Age of the Jewish Covenant.

A

8

ar

H

of

an

in

the

aff

the

Swa

Th Day

war. vide

be d

If we confider each kind of Prophecy die stinctly by itself, we shall the better differen how this Cafe Annds. To begin then with those relating to the temporal Covenint: Abraham was called from his Father's House. apon a Promise that he thould become reat Nation, and that his Seed Bould poffest be Land of Cansan. This Promise could not be fulfilled in all its Parts, till Abraban's Family was multiplied into a Nation! This required many Years; and what must be come of these Children of Promise in the mean time? They had no Country of their own; where then Thould they fettle and multiply? I will not launch out into Specy lation upon the Methods of Providence by which the People of Ifrael were raised and preferved; but let any one read the Prophe eles from the Call of Abrabam to Mojes the will evidently fee that they refer to this State of Things To arm the Faith of Abraban and his Policisty, against the Fears of Ding pointments, under the necessary Delays, and dom. fome

fome evil Treatments they were to undergo; God acquaints Abrabam with his Purpofe, and tells him, his Seed thould be four bundred Years in a ftrange Land. This Circumflance, had it not been foretold, would, in all Probability, have blotted out the Memory of the Promises four hundred Years of Difires are sufficient to cure any People of their great Expectations. But this Prophecy was a Warning and a Security in this Respect. When the Time of Servitude drew near, and the People wanted more than ordinary Help to preserve their Trust in the Promise of God, Facob, before his End, was enlightned by the Spirit of Prophecy, to fet before the Pwelve Tribes the Glory, and Honours, and Possessions, that should accrue to each in the happy Day of their Triumph: By the same Spirit, Joseph, on his Death-bed, assures them. That God would surely visit them, and bring them into the Land which he Sware to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob. These were Cordials prepared against the Day of Distress, then near at hand.

The Times of Mojes and of Joshua, those Days of Miracles as well as Prophecies, want no Explication: The Intention of Providence appears plain in every Step, and may

be discerned by every Eye.

Kirzimst noon man The

bog ildo

è

H

è

19

8

h

44

00

#

ôt

Pi

fis

þ

in

0

by

e Fe

Yè

施工品

ac

132 DISCOURSES VI

The Commonwealth of Ifrael was raised and flourished under the temporal Covenant given at first to Noab; and in a particular manner, with additional Promifes, confirm'd to Abraham and his Seed : For this Reafon all the Promiles and Threatnings of the Law are temporal, fuitable to the Age and Seafon of the World. But thefe temporal Bleffings and Punishments were fo visibly administred by the Hand of God, that every Instance of the Execution of the Threats and Promile of the Law, became a new Proof of its divine Authority. If you enquire why God did fo visibly interpose in the Government of this People, always guiding and directing them in the Conduct of temporal Athans, and Matters of State, by the Voice of his Prophets, when all other Nations before, and fince, have been left under the general Rules of Providence to their own Conduct and Discretion; the Answer, I think, is this No other Nation ever had a divine Law, given upon the Establishment of temporal Blessings and Punishments; and therefore God had not fo bound himfelf to any other Nation, to account to them for their temporal Prosperity and Adversity: But to the Jews, with whom he had established a Law and a Covenant upon temporal Promises, he stood obliged

f

te

ti

obliged to make good his Word, and to justify Dimfelf to them in the Administration of temporal Affairs. For this Reason a Succession of Prophets was raised up among them, at whose Mouths they might receive the Direction of God: And this is what Moses means, when he says, "What Nation" is there so great, who hath God so nigh unto "them, as the Lord our God is in all Things "that we call upon him for?" Deut. iv. 7.

20

0

3

1

1

ないに の 日本の 事 から

al

3

ed

Whenever it was necessary to punish the People for their Disobedience, that they might not be tempted by the Prosperity of other Nations, and their own Advertity, to fall away to other Gods, they were forewarned of the Things that were to befal them; their Calamities were prophetically described to them, that they might know whenever they fuffered, that it was the very Hand of God, of their own God, that was upon them? And this is the Reafon of our finding fo many Prophecies, under the Law, relating to the Civil State and Condition of the Year; for this Caufe the great Captivity of Babylon is to largely and fully foretold by the Prophets, that the People might not be tempted to think that the Gods of the Nations had prevailed against them, and thereby

tl

A

n

th

I,

ne

th

Si

fo

th

th

th

tu

tic

fre

th

gi

be seduced, as oftentimes they were seduced by this very Imagination, to forfake God in their Distress; but that they might know that the Almighty Hand of the Lord was in all their Sufferings, and might thereby become humble and obedient. And further, that they might know that all their Adverfity and Prosperity came on them, according to the express Terms of their Covenant with God, who bleffed them when obedient, and humbled them when obstinate. All Nations have had, and still have their Turns of Prosperity and Adversity, and God thinks not himself obliged to account to them for the Measures of his Providence towards them: But the Case was otherwise with the Fewish Nation; for God having established a Covenant with them, upon temporal Promises and temporal Curies; the very Execution of the Covenant, on God's Part, required him to appear, and openly administer the Penalties and Promises of his Law; to procure the Happiness of the People when obedient, and to inflict the Punishment due to their Ini-Hence it is that he directs them in the Way of temporal Happiness by the Voice of his Prophets; and gives them open Warning of all Evils which he brings on them;

them; that they might see him in every Instance performing the Word of his Covenant. Every Prophecy from God spoke in
the Language of Moses's Song, See now, that
I, even I am he, and there is no God with me;
I kill, and make alive; I wound and I beal;
neither is there any that can deliver out of my
Hand.

n

W

in

0-

r,

[-

g

h

d

38

ot

B

d

0

n

3

This accounts for all the Prophecies of the Old Testament relating to the temporal State of the Jewish Nation; with which we have no further Concern, than only to give a reasonable Account of them; that the antient Prophets of God may not pass for mere Fortune-tellers, as they have been represented to the World of late.

The People of the Jews were so prone to follow the Customs of the Nations around them, and to fall away to Idolatry, that from their coming into Canaan, till the Times of the Babylonish Captivity, there was a perpetual Struggle between the Prophets of God, and the salse Prophets of the Nations, which should prevail; with this View are many antient Prophecies given, to preserve the People from being seduced by the Nations round them. We may learn this from the Reptoof given to the Messengers of Abaziah, who

had fent to enquire of Baalzebub the God of Ekron, whether he should recover of his Difease: " Go, says the Angel of the Lord to " Elijab, Go meet the Meffengers of the King of Samaria, and fay unto them ; Is it not " because there is not a God in Ifrael, that " ye go to enquire of Baalzebub the God of " Ekron? Now therefore thus faith the Lord, " Thou shall not come down from that Bed on w which thou art gone up, but shalt surely die," 2 Kings i. 3, 4. To the very fame Purpole God fpeaks in the Prophet Ifaiab, rendering an Account of his antient Prophecies " I have declared the former Things from the Beginning, and they went forth out of my " Mouth, and I shewed them, I did them suddenly, and they came to pass. Because I knew that thou art obstinate, and thy Neck is an Iron Sinew, and thy Brow Brafs. bave even from the Beginning declared it to " thee; before it came to pass I showed it thee; " lest thou shouldst fay, Mine Idel bath done them, and my graven Image, and my molten Image bath commanded them," Ifaiah xlviii, 3, 4, 5

You see now upon what Foot all the Prophecies in the Old Testament stand, which relate to the temporal Concerns of the Jew-

ilb Nation; you fee likewise the Reason why this kind of Prophecy has ceased in the Christian Church. The Gospel is not founded in temporal Promises; so far from it, that we are called upon to take up our Crofs, and The bringing in of better follow Christ. Hopes has vacated the Promises of the Mofaic Covenant; and it is expected of us, after fo much Light given, that our Faith should be Proof against the Adversaries of the World, without the Help of a Prophet to foretel, or to reveal to us, in every Instance, the Counsel of God.

These Prophecies relating to the Things of this Life, concern us but little; they have had their Completion, long fince, in Events which affect not us: But others there are relating to the great Depositum entrusted with the Yews, even the Hopes of Redemption; which were to be a Bleffing to all the Nations of the Earth, in which we are highly concerned, and which will deserve our par-

ticular Confideration.

f

t f

73

is so

ツレール

1

to

re

b

-

Modern to the discount of head of the his this this kind of Propince in a caried to the his caried to the Common Common Land of the manner of

Thefe Prophecies relating to the Things of this I see concern us but increased this I see concern us but increased their Completion, along there, in A seed which after the great Dryfram centrality with the Very framentality with winds we at the long of Redering to the Nations of the Nations

n

to

assuccess - Discourse

CONTRACTOR DE LA CONTRA

DISCOURSE VI.

cite of the cite of to offe of the cite of the cite of the



HE Prophecies of the Old Testament, generally considered, relate either to the temporal State and Condition of the

Jews, and were, in order to the Administration and Execution, on God's Part, of the temporal Covenant, given to Abraham and his natural Descendents; or they relate to that great and universal Bleffing, promifed to Abraham and to his Seed, though not limited to them, but expresly defigned and extended, in the Words of the original Covenant, to all the Nations of the World. Of these, we have already considered the first Kind, and endeavoured to thew the Purport and Defign of Providence, in the many Oracles reducible to this Head. It remains now, that we confider the Prophecies of the fecond Kind in the same Method, not enquiring into the express Meaning and Accomplishment

t

t

of every fingle Prophecy, applicable to this Subject; but into the general Use and Defign of these Prophecies; which being discovered, we shall be able, with better Success, to apply ourselves to the Examination of each divine Oracle. The Prophecies of the feveral Periods, already confidered, have been found to correspond to the State of Religion in the World, at the Time of giving the Prophecy: A great Prefumption that the Case is the fame under the Jewish Dispensation. We must therefore, in order to our present Enquiry, confider the State of Religion under the Mosaick Dispensation, and examine how far, and to what Purpoles Prophecy was requisite, and whether in fact these Purposes were ferved by the Prophecies under the Law.

As to the State of Religion under the Law of Moses, to save your Time and my own, I shall refer myself to the Books of the Law, in every Man's Hand. But two Questions there are, necessary to be considered at present; and first, The Promise to Abraham consisting of two distinct Parts, or including two distinct Covenants; the one, relating to the temporal State and Prosperity of his Seed in the Land of Canaan; the other, to the Bleffing,

DISCOURSE NI 141

fing, which thro' him and his Seed, was to be conveyed to all Nations of the Earth; the Question is, to which of these two Covenants the Law of Mofes is annexed. If the Law ,was given in Execution of the Promife, made to all Nations, then have the Nations nothing further to expect; God has fulfilled his Word: The Jews are right in adhering to their Law, and we in the wrong in rejeding to Burif the Law of Mojes is built upon the temporal Covenant only, and given properly to the Jews only then both Jews and Geneiles have further Hopes, and a just Expectation remaining, to fee God's Promile to all Nations accomplished, which was not accomplished by the giving of the Law,

Phase already, in the Course of this Argument, observed to you, that the Law of Mojes was given to the Jews only, and not to all Nationes For which these Reasons, among others, may be assigned:

First. The Obligation of no Law extends beyond the Terms of its Promulgation; now the Law of Moses was promulged to the Jews only; the Words are, Hear O Israel; whereas, had the Law been intended for all Nations, it ought to liave been promulged to all; and the Words should have been,

thus the Christian Law is promulged; the Apostles had it expressly in Commission from Christ "To teach ALL NATIONS, bap "tizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, tracking them to observe all Things what sever I have commanded you: and to, I am with you ALWAY, even unto the END OF THE WORLD:"A Commission, which plainty shews that the Gospel Dispensation extends to all Places, and all Times, even to the End of the World; and that no other new Law is to be expected minimas a notation.

Secondly, The Law of Moses relates to the temporal Covenant only, as being established expressy upon the Terms and Conditions of it. The Ten Commandments are sounded upon this, that God brought them, the Terms of the Land of Egypt went the Moule of Bondage: A Reason which extended to the People of the Jews only afor all other Nations were not brought nour of the Land of Egypt, and the House of Bondage, The first Threatning is temporal, of visiting the Iniquity of the Eathers upon the Children unto the third and fourth Generation to the Promise is of the same Kind; both relative

t

to the temporal Covenant: as is likewise the Promise of the fifth Commandment, That thy Days may be long in the Land which the

Lord thy God givest thee, a stud our sais a

Thirdly. Many Rites and Performances of the Law were confined to the Land of Canaan, and the Temple of Jerufalem: for which reason even the Jews, in their Disperfion pretend nor to observe the Baw in these Points, and they would be Transgreffors of the Law, if they did Now his abford, if the Law was intended for all People, that the main Performances of it Bould be confined within the Telritories of one particular People only And therefore, when the Chris tian Law was to take place, every Country was to be a proper Place of divine Worthip? Which is the true Meaning of our Saviour's Words to the Woman of Samaria: Weman believe me, the Hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this Mountain, nor yet at Jerulalem worfbiplebe Poster is John iv. 21.0 to bash

Now this being the Case, tis evident that the Promise of a Bleffing to all Nations subfifted in its sull Force and Vigour, during the Continuance of the Law of Moses; for as that Promise was not completed by the giving of the Law, in which all Nations were

not

144 DISCOURSE VL

not concern'd; so neither could so general a Promise he annull'd, or set aside, by a private Law, given to one People only. And this is the true Sense and Meaning of St. Poul's Argument, Gal. iii. "This I say, that the "Covenant that was confirmed before of God" in Christ, the Law which was four hum dred and thirty Years ofter cannot distributed." nul, that it should make the Promise of

t

n

b

F

tl

m

F

It

in

th

in

re

to

at

A

the

mo

Ty

tio

fing

bei

and

Go

the

and

real

Points, and they would be I . Baffe snon " Secondly, Another Question proper to be confider'd with respect to the State of Religion under the Jewif Dispensation isthin How far the Religion of the Jewn was pen paratory to that new Difpensations swhich was in due Time to be revesled in Accomplishment of the Promise made to all Na tions. Now if Abraham and his Passeriw were chosen, not merely for their own Salves or out of any partial Views and Regards to wards them, but to be Influments in the Hand of God for bringing about his great Defigns in the World stiff the temporal Covenant was given for the Salse of the everlasting Covenant, and to be fublewices the Introduction of it; leis highly probable that all Parts of the Jewish Dispensation were adapted to ferre the fame End, land that the tou

the Law founded on the temporal Covenant itself was, to prepare the Way to better Promifes. If this, upon the whole, appears to be a reasonable Supposition, then have we a Foundation to enquire into the Meaning of the Law, not merely as it is a literal Command to the Jews; but as containing the Figure and Image of good Things to come. It can hardly be supposed, that God intending finally to fave the World by Chrift, and the preaching of the Gofpel, thould give an intermediate Law, which had no respect nor relation to the Covenant, which he intended to establish for ever. And whoever will be at the Pains to confider feriously the whole Administration of Providence together, from the Beginning to the End, may fee perhaps more reason than he imagines, to allow of Types and Figures in the Jewish Law.

To preced then: The Jewish Dispensation not conveying to all Nations the Blessing promised through Abraham's Seed, but being only the Administration of the Hopes and Expectations, created by the Promise of God; in this respect it stood entirely upon the Word of Prophecy; for suture Hopes and Expectations from God can have no other real Foundation. In as much then as the

L

Tewi/b

Hopes of the Gospel, the Religion itself was a Prophecy; and as the Jewish Church was founded to preserve, and to administer these Hopes, the prophetical Office was in some measure necessary and essential to this Church, to nourish and support their Hopes and Expectations from God.

A

A

di

of

B

B

na

W

A

in

W

are

bou

the

thee

ules

of

flox

than

fam

Fatl

own

Ora

and

Senfe

pron

Parts

the to

In what manner the Bleffing of all Men was established with Abraham, Isaac, and Facob, we have already feen. The next Limitation of it is to the Tribe of Judab, in that famous Prophecy delivered by Jacob, just before his Death, The Sceptre Shall not depart from Judah, nor a Lawgiver from between bis Feet, until Shiloh come, and unto bim shall the gathering of the People be, Gen. xlix. 10. There are so many Interpretations of this Prophecy, some peculiar to the Jews, and some to Christians; and so many Difficulties to be accounted for, whatever Way we take, that I hall not pretend to enter into the Decision of them at present. But take the whole Prophecy, relating to the Tribe of Judab, together, and there will be enough to answer our immediate Purpole, without entring into these Obscurities. The dah, fays Jacob, Thou art he whom thy Brethren

thren shall praise; thy Hand shall be in the Neck of thine Enemies: Thy Father's Children shall bow down before thee. In a Form of Words, not unlike this, the peculiar Bleffing was appropriated to Shem; Japhet hall dwell in the Tents of Shem, and Canaan Sball be his Servant, Gen. ix. 26. And when Jacob himself had the Bleffing of Abrabam lettled on him, by his Father Ljaac, in preference to his Brother Efau, the very Words in which the Grant was made to him. are thefe: Let People ferve thee, and Nations bow down to thee; be thou Lord over thy Brethren, and let thy Mother's Sons bow down to thee, Gen. xxvii. 29. Now when Jacob uses partly these very Words, partly others of like Import, can he be understood to beflow any other Bleffing on his Son Judah, than that very Bleffing, which he, in this same Form of Words, received from his Father? Could he forget the Import of his own Bleffing when he was preferred to Efau? Or could he use this solemn Form of Words, and mean fomething quite different from the Sense they carried, when his antient Father pronounced them over him? The other Parts of this Prophecy relate, I think, to the temporal Prosperity of Judah, and pro-

mile

to D.

DI DI,

b-

29

tét

lut

he

b

se,

fu-

16-

ren

mise a Continuance of that Tribe till the Blessing of Abraham should come, and be extended to all Nations: but I will not enter into this large Field of Controversy.

The next and the last Limitation of this special Promise is to the Family of David: a Point so uncontested, that there is no room to call it in question, without rejecting the Authority of all the Prophets; and so plain withal, that it needs no proving. Here the Promise rested until it fell upon bim, for whom it was referved, and to whom it was ever due; upon him, to whom the Birthright appertained, who was the First-born of every Creature; and concerning whom the Almighty had declared long before, I will make him my First-born, higher than the Kings of the Earth. Here it is fixed, and here it must rest, till all Things are accomplished; for he must reign till he bath fut all Enemies under bis Feet; till Death itself is fwallowed up in Victory.

It is much to be observed, that the Prophecies relating to the Covenant of better Hopes, were given to the People of God, when Religion itself seemed to be in Distress, and to want all Helps to support it in the Word. When Abraham was called to for-

Gke

13

25

th

A

E

die

to

me

ph

ang

Aff

Ad

alw

Dif

to t

was

the

fake the Country and the Religion of his Fathers, then had he the Promise of the bleffed Seed. Isaac and Facob being furrounded on all Sides with Idolatry, in the midst of a very corrupt and degenerate World, were sustained by the same Hopes: When the People of Ifrael were in Egypt, and under many Temptations of following the Gods of the Country, then was the Promise settled on Judob, and the remarkable Prophecy given of Shiloh's coming. As foon as God appeared manifestly, and oftentimes miraculously, making good the Promises of the temporal Covenant to the Children of Abraham, and the People wanted no other Evidence to keep them stedfast in their Obedience, or to fecure them from falling away to the Gods of the Nations round them, we meet with few Instances of this fort of Prophecy. Whilft God himself was Governor and King of the People, and directed all their Affairs by the Voice of his Prophets, their Adversity and their Prosperity, which were always in proportion to their Obedience and Disobedience, were a sufficient Instruction to them to cleave to God stedfastly. This was the Case from Moses to David, who had the Promise of the everlasting Covenant L 3 established

70

b -

of

he

ill

be

nd

m-

all

is

10-

tter

lod,

els.

the

for-

Gke

1

it

p

W

th

CO

th

the

ed

of

Ye

der

mon

Pro

Wei

the

by 1

to t

after

eftablished with him and with his Seed, in Reward of his Constancy and Faith towards God under all the Difficulties, thre' which he made his way to the Crown, appointed to him by God. But when the fucceeding Kings fell into Idolatry, and the People prone to Evil, followed their Example, lo that God determin'd to remove them out of his Sight, and fcatter them among the idolatrous Nations, whose Gods they had chosen before the Lord their Saviour, then, for the Sake of the few Righteous, were the better Hopes revived, that the Just might wire by Faith, and that a Remnant might be faved. The Prophet Ifaiah, who speaks so plainly of the Kingdom of Chrift, entered upon his Office not long before the Ten Tribes were carried into Captivity, as a Punishment for their Idolatry: The Prophet Jeremy law the other Tribes carried away to Babylon; And Daniel was himself one of the Children of the Captivity. This was a Time in which true Faith wanted the Comfort of future Hopes; the present Scene was dark and gloomy, the Loving-kindness of the Lord was hid from his People, and they law nothing but Tokens of Anger and Dilplerfure on every fide: In this Time therefor bidilletta God

God thought fit to give more and plainer Intimations of his Purpole, to establish the Kingdom of Righteousness, than ever had been given before, from the Days of Adam, Now was it that the Seed in whom all Nations were to be bleffed was manifestly described; that the Time and Place of his Birth were appointed; his great Works, his Glories, and his Sufferings, were foretold. Now was it, that God taught his People plainly to expect a new Covenant, a better than that made with their Fathers: In a word, now was it that all Eyes were opened to look for his coming, who was to be the Glory of Israel; the Desire of all Nations; a Light to lighten the Gentiles. This great Scene being opened, and placed in fo clear a View, the Work of Prophecy was finished, and in a few Years the Gift utfelf ceafed: A plain Evidence that the Spirit of Prophecy is the Tellimony of Jefus; and that all the Bleffings and Promises, given to God's antient People, were to have their final Accomplishment in the Manifestation of the bleffed Seed.

The ten Tribes, which were carried away by the King of Afforia, never more returned to their own Country; the Tribe of Judab, after seventy Years Captivity, came back to

n

Af

k

he

W

本社

od

L4

the Land of Canaan, erected a new Temple, and continued to be a Tribe and a People ill the last Destruction of Jerufalem by the Romans. If you think all this happened by Chance, there is no room to ask you any Questions about it: But if you allow the Hand of God to be in these Events, tell me from whence this Distinction, this partial Regard to the Tribe of Judah? Read their own Prophets, and learn from thence the Character of their Tribe, you'll find no Merit in them to justify this Regard of God towards them: They were as bad as their Neighbours; but they had one Advantage, they had a Promise which none of the ten Tribes had, That the Sceptre Should not de. part from Judah - till Shiloh came: For the fulfilling of this Promife, and all the Promiles relating to the bleffed Seed, was this Tribe preserved some hundreds of Years after the others had ceased to be a People.

That this Tribe was resettled purely for the Accomplishment of God's Promises of a better Covenant, appears from all the Circumstances of their Condition after their Return: They were not restored to enjoy the antient Privileges of the People of God in the Land of Canaan: Those Privileges were

forfeited

forfeited by their Iniquity; their Urim and their Thummim were no more heard of; and after they were once established in the Land (a Point in which Providence was nearly concerned) the Gift of Prophecy ceased, and God appeared not in the Management of their temporal Affairs, as formerly he had done: They were often distressed, and often brought near Ruin; they suffered in all the Changes of the Empire of the East, and were, as they express themselves, Servants in the Land which God gave to their Fathers, Neh. ix. 36. I mention this Particular, to account to you the more clearly for the ceafing of Prophecy some Ages before the coming of Christ. Prophecy among the Jews was relative to the two Covenants given to Abraham; when the Jews had forfeited the Bleffings of the temporal Covenant, and God had fully opened and prepared the Way for the coming in of the fecond, he recalled his Ministers and Ambassadors, for whose Service he had no longer any occasion.

10

is

er

10

1

e-

be

in

TC

ed

That the Prophecies, relating to the second and better Covenant, produced a suitable Effect, and were Matter of Comfort and Confolation to the Righteous among the Ifraelites, may be collected from some sew Allu-

fions

fie

tb

th

W

tie

ea

in

fi

th

1/

1

TÉ

Q

t

b

F

e

fions to the Opinions of their own Times to be found in the Books of the Prophets. That the People of Ifrael had, in the Days of the Prophet Amos, a Notion of some great Deliverance, or Bleffing, still to come, may be gathered from the Reproof given to those, who, the void of the Fear of God, yet expected a Share in his Bleffing. Wo unto you that defire the Day of the Lord: To what End is it for you? The Day of the Lord is Darkness, and not Light, Amos v. 18. As some waited in Faith for the Consolation of Ifrael, so others there were who mocked at all fuch Hopes and Expectations: To these the Prophet Isaiah Speaks; We unto them that draw Iniquity with Cords of Vanity, and Sin as it were with a Cart-rope: That fay, Let bim make Speed and haften bis Work, that we may see it: And let the Counsel of the Holy One of Israel draw nigh and come, that we may know it, ver. 18, 19. Under the Power of these irreligious Mockers the Righteous (and fuch has ever been their Lot) were wearied and oppressed, but the Prophet speaks Comfort to them; Hear the Words of the Lord, ye that tremble at his Word; your Brethren that hated you, and cast you out for my Name-Sake, Said, Let the Lord be glorihed:

fied : But be foul appear to your Joy, and they shall be ashamed, ixvi. 5. As wicked as the Reople of Ifrael were, yet in all Times were there forme who waited for the Salvation of God; whole Faith and Hope are well expressed by the Son of Sirach the Power of the Earth is in the Hand of the Lord, and in due Time be will set over it one that is profitable, Ecclus & 40 deligirale (

That the Prophecy, given at the Time of the Fall, was understood, in the antient Freeish Church, to relate to the Times of the Meffias, may with great Probability be inferred from many Passeges, but respecially from one in Ifaiah, where after a full Description of the Kingdom of Christ, and the Happiness of those who were the Seed of the Bleffed of the Lord, the State and Condition of the Wicked, in the Time of that Kingdom, is thus deferibed in few Words; And Duft Shall be the Serpent's Meat, Ifa. Ixv. 25. By what Figure of Speech, or for what Reason is the Serpent here made to fignify those, who are diffinguished from the Seed of the Bleffed? And how comes the Punishment of these Reprobates to be fer forth by the Serpent's eating Duft? Here is nothing in the Prophetoito explain this Figure; but he feems

to use it as a Saying well known, and perfectly understood by his Countrymen; and from whence could they borrow it, but from the History of Man's Fall? There you may find the Seed of the Blessed, to whom Victory over the Serpent is promised; and there may you see the Serpent doomed to eat Dust; and the Allusion to this antient Prophecy, in Isaiah's Description of the Kingdom of the Messias, shews in what Sense it was understood of old, and for many Ages before the Birth of Christ.

These Prophecies, relating to the Kingdom of the Messias, have still a larger and more extensive Use, not confined to any particular Age, but reaching to every Age of the Christian Church: They were given to the Jews of old for the Support of their Faith, and are a standing Reproof to their Children of this Age for their Unbelief: They taught those of old Time to expect the Kingdom of Christ, and are a Condemnation to those of this Time for rejecting it: They are a Support and an Evidence to the Cospel, and furnish every true Believer with an Answer to give to him, who asketh the Reason of the Hope that is in him.

They who are educated in the Belief of Christianity,

I

Christianity, and taught to receive the Books of both Testaments with equal Reverence. are not apt to distinguish between the Evidence for their Faith, arifing from the one and the other. But if we look back to the earliest Times of preaching the Gospel, and confider how the Case stood as to the Yewilb Converts on one fide, who were convinced of the divine Authority of the Old Testament, and as to the Gentile Converts on the other, who had no such Persuasion, the Distinction will appear very manifestly, The antient Prophecies, tho' they are Evidence both to the Jew and to the Gentile, yet are they not so to both in the same way of Reasoning and Deduction, nor to the fame End and Purpose. For consider; the Jew was possessed of the Oracles of God, and firmly perfuaded of the Truth of them; the very first thing therefore which he had to do upon the Appearance of the Messiah, was to examine his Title, by the Characters given of him in the Prophets; he could not, confistently with his Belief in God, and Faith in the antient Prophecies, attend to other Arguments, till fully satisfied and convinced in this: All the Prophecies of the Old Testament, relating to the Office and Character of the

h

P

it

CI

fil

re

W

the Meffiah, were immoveable Bars to all Pretentions, till fulfilled and accomplished in the Person pretending to be the promised. and long-expected Redeemer. For this Reafon the Preachers of the Gospel, in applying to the Yews, begin with the Argument from Prophecy. Thus St. Paul, in his Discourse with the Jews at Antioch in Pifidia, begins with the Call of Abraham, and after a fort historical Deduction of Matters from thence to the Times of David, headds, Of this Man's Seed bath God, according to bis Promife, raised unto Ifrael a Saviour Jelus, Acts xiii. 23. Where you fee plainly that the whole Argument rests upon the Authority of Prophecys and all the Parts of this Apostolical Sermon are answerable to this Beginning, proceeding from one End to the other upon the Authority of the old Prophets: But the very fame Apostle St. Paul, preaching to the People of Athens, Acts xvii. argues from other Topics; he fays nothing of the Prophets, to whole Mission and Authority the Athenians were perfect Strangers, but begins with declaring to them, God that made the World, and all Things therein; He goes on condemning all idolatrous Practices, and affuring them that " God is not wor shipped with Men's Hands, as

" the be needed any thing." He accounts to them for the past Times of Ignorance at which God winked, and tells them, that now he calls all Men to Repentance, having appointed Christ Jesus to be the Judge of all Men; for the Truth of which he appeals to the Evidence of Christ's Refurrection, -"Whereof, fays the Apostle, be bath given Af-" furance unto all Men, in that he bath raifed " bim from the Dead," wer. 31. Whence comes this Difference? How comes St. Paul's Argument, upon one and the fame Subject, in Acts xiii, and xvii, to be fo unlike to each other? Can this be accounted for any other way, than by confidering the different Circumftances of the Persons to whom he delivered himself. In Acts xiii. he argues profesfedly with Jews, to whom were committed the Oracles of God, and who, from these Oracles, were well instructed in the great Marks and Characters of the expected Migfiab. It had been highly abfurd therefore to reason with them upon other Arguments, till he had first convinced them by their Prophets; - and having fo convinced them, it would have been impertinent. To them therefore he urges and applies the Authority of Prophecy only; But to the Athenians, who

160 DISCOURSE VE

who knew not the Prophets, or if they knew them, yet had no Reverence or Esteem for them, it had been quite ridiculous to offer Proofs from Prophecies: The Appeal therefore before them, is made to the sound and clear Principles of Natural Religion; and to the Miracles of the Gospel, the Fame of which probably had, long before, reached to Athens; and the Truth of which, they being mere Matters of Fact, was capable of undeniable Evidence and Demonstration.

It is very observable that St Paul, in his Sermon at Athens, goes no further, than calling them to Repentance, and to Faith in Christ, as the Person appointed by God to indge the World: In which Doctrine he had Natural Religion with him in every Point, excepting the Appointment of Gbrift to be Judge, for which he appeals to the Evidence, given by God in raising Jesus from the Dead. But to the Jews he speaks of a Saviour, of Remission of Sins, of Justification of all Believers from all Things, from which the Law of Moses could not justify. Whence comes this Difference, unless from hence, that the Yews were from their Scriptures well acquainted with the loft Condition of Man, and knew that a Redemption from Sin, and the

th th W

Prothe

fto the Ini

ting of l the Sign

Pur Ld vide

and cies tion

they vide

came Judg the

Gent

the Powers of it, was to be expected? But the Gentiles had loft this Knowledge; and were first to be taught the Condition of the World and the various Administrations of Providence with regard to Mankind, before they could have any just Notion of the Redemotion of the World. 100000 A till 41

With respect to the Gentiles then, the Cafe flood thus: They were called from Idols to the Acknowledgment of the true God; from Iniquity to the Practice of Wirthe , by letting before them Christ Jefus, the Preacher of Righteonfacts, and the appointed Judge of the World, under the Confirmation of many Signs and Wonders, wrought by God for this Purpofer Being To far established, they were led back to view this wonderful Scene of Providence, as it flood in the antient Prophecies; and with them the Authority of the Prophecies stood frainly upon the exact Completion, which was before their Eyes: From the Anthority of Prophecy fo established, they understood the past Workings of Providence, and the State of the World; and came to fee that Christ was not only the Judge, but the Redeemer of Mankind: To the Yew Prophecy was the first Proof, to the Gentile it was the last: The Few believed in Chrift,

M

Christ, because foretold by the Prophets; the Gentiles believed the Prophets, because they had so exactly foretold Jesus Christ. Both became firm Believers; having, each in his way, a full View of all the Dispensations of Providence towards Mankind.

If this Account be true, as it appears to me to be, it will enable us to clear this Argument from Prophecy of the many Misspresentations, under which it has been industriously clouded: It will shew us, that then is no occasion for a Gentile to become a few, in order to his becoming a Christian, upon the Authority of the antient Prophets: It will shew us, that the Proof from Propher is not Argumentum ad bominem, in the few Case, nor in the Gentiles; nor yet an Argument of the same kind in both Cases the in both Cafes proceeding upon real and folid Principles of Reafon, But I must leave the Applications to you, and proceed to observe another Use of Prophecy, with regard to the Yews, and for which the Gentile World feems not to have had the fame Occasion as about

The Jews lived under a divine Law, established in Signs and Wonders, and mighty Works, founded in very great Promiser on one side, in Threatnings of mighty Terror

20

0

T

ar

L

C

th

TO

th

an

th

ag

wi

the

int

Co

to.

wh

are

Te

cla

Ple

Mo

tion

Ap

the

and

his

he

ey

his

of

to

zu-

10

duere

190,

TOC

It

cey

ews

gu-

bild

refe

the

ems

vic

Ata-

hty

On

rror

00

on the other; as far as the Bleffings and Terrors of this World can extend: They are warned over and over not to forfake their Law, or to fuffer any frange Customs and Ceremonies to grow up among them. These Cautions, intended to preferve them from the Corruptions of the Heathen Nations around them, might eafily, as in the Event they have done, grow into Prejudices against any future Revelation, though made upon the Authority of God himself. To guard against such Prejudices, and to render them without Excuse, it was but reasonable to give them early and frequent Notice of the Change intended, that they might not, under the Colour of adhering stedfastly and faithfully to God's first Covenant, reject his second, when the Time of Publication came. There are of this Sort many Prophecies in the Old Testament; of this Kind are the many Declarations on God's Part, that he had no Pleasure in Sacrifices and Oblations, in New Moons and in Sabbaths; Strange Declarations, confidering that all these were his own Appointments! But not ftrange, confidering the many and frequent Prophecies of a new and a better Covenant, to be established with his People. The Prophet Harab is frequent-Mg1 .199 , m

164 DISCOURSE

ly stiled the Evangelical Prophet, because of the many and express Prophecies, to be found in him, relating to Christ and his Church: Now this Prophet, in the very Entrance upon his Work, thews the little Value of mere legal Institutions: To what purpose, says he, speaking in God's Name, is the Multitude of your Sacrifices unto me? - 1 am full of the Burnt-Offerings of Rams, and the Fat of fed Beags, and I delight not in the Blood of Bullocks, or of Lambs, or of He-Goats - Your New Moons, and your appointed Feafts, my Soul bateth : they are a Trouble unto me, I am weary to bear them, Isaiah i. 11, 14.

But the most remarkable Passage of this kind, and which deserves our particular Attention, is the Prophecy of Moses himself, recorded in the xviith of Deuteronomy. The Lord thy God will raife up unto thee a Prophet from the midft of thee, of thy Brethren, like unto me, unto bim ye shall bearken, vet. 15. The same is repeated again, ver. 18. with this Addition; And it shall come to pass, (they are the Words of God) that subofoever will not bearken unto my Words, which be (that Prophet) Shall fpeak in my Name, I will require it of him, ver. 19. Here now is a plain

Declaration

I

tl

n

al

g

10

an

th

gu

wi

pla the

Suc

all

OW wh

·phe

Mir

the

·I

Declaration on God's Part, at the very Time the Law was established, of another Prophet, like unto Moses, to be raised in time, as a new Lawgiver, to whom all were to yield Obedience. I know full well, that great Authorities are produced for interpreting these Words of a Succession of Prophets, in the Jewish Church: But be the Authorities never so great, the Appeal lies to the Law and to the Testimony, and thither we must go.

In the first Place then, the Text speaks of one Prophet only, in the singular Number, and not of many. In this Case therefore the Letter of the Text is with us; an Argument which ought to be of great weight with those, who make such heavy Complaints, whenever we pretend to go beyond the literal Sense of the Old Testament. But,

ı,

is

1-

lf,

-

71,

15.

th

ey

pill

hat

16-

ain ion Secondly, To expound this Passage of a Succession of Prophets, and to say that they all were to be like Moses, contradicts God's own Declaration concerning the Manner in which he intended to deal with other Prophets.

In the Twelfth of Numbers we read, that Miriam and Aaron began to mutiny against the Influence and Authority of Moses. Hath

M 3

the Lord spoken only to Moses, say they, bath be not spoken also by us? This Controversy was like to be attended with such ill Consequences, that God thought proper to interpose himself. Hear then his Determination; If there be a Prophet among you, I the Lord will make myself known unto him in a Vision, and will speak unto him in a Dream. My Servant Moses is not so, who is faithful in all mine House; with him will I speak Mouth to Mouth, even apparently, and not in dark Speeches; and the Similitude of the Lord shall be behold: Wherefore then were ye not afraid to speak against my Servant Moses?

Here now is a plain Declaration of the great Difference between Moses and all other Prophets, and as plain an Account wherein that Difference did lie: As to all other Prophets, God declares he would speak to them in Visions and in Dreams, but with Moses he would converse Mouth to Mouth, or, as it is elsewhere expressed, Face to Face. Herein then consisted one chief Dignity and Eminence of Moses; and in this Respect the Prophets of Israel were not to be tike him.

Thirdly, That the Likeness to Moses spoken of in the Passage under Consideration, had a special Regard to this singular Privilege

-

0

p

P

W

ed

M

fp

A

fto

nic

laft

An

like

to I

Boo

fent

ceiv

tick

und

and

feen

they

ly fr

Was

ronos

of seeing God Face to Face, is evident, partly from the Text itself, and partly from the Close of the Book of Deuteronemy, compared with the Text: In the Text itself a Promise is given of a Prophet like Moses, which Likepess in the 18th Verse is expounded by God's faying, I will put my Words in bis Mouth: Which imports something more than speaking to him in Visions and in Dreams: And that the Likeness to Moses was underfood to confift in this immediate Communication with God, is most evident from the last Verses of the Book; where it is said. And there arose not a Prophet since in Israel like unto Moses, whom the Lord knew Face Who added these Words to the Book of Deuteronomy, it matters not at prefent to enquire; for, they having been received in the Jewish Church, are an authentick Testimony, first, how the antient Yews understood these Words, like unto Moses; and fecondly, That the antient Church had feen no Prophet like unto Mafes: And yet they had a Succession of Prophets immediately from the Death of Moses, of whom. Fosbua was the first ; and these last Verses of Deuteronomy, added after, at least in the Time of Tofbua, M 4

^{*} Hof. xii. 13. Ecclus, xlvi. t.

Joshua, exclude him from all Pretentions of being the Prophet, or one of the Prophets like unto Moses: And if this Character will not fit Joshua, much less will it sit those who succeeded him, who were not greater, nor had greater Employment under God, than he: An evident Proof, that the Promise of a Prophet like unto Moses, was not understood by the antient Jewish Church, to relate to a Succession of Prophets among them; since they declare to us, that in the Succession of Prophets, there had not been one like unto Moses.

to

"

"

n

W

N

pl

V

A

Spi

an

pu

un

The later Jews have not departed from the Opinion of their Ancestors in this respect. They distinguish Moses from all other Prophets, and the highest Degree of Inspiration is stiled by them Gradus Mosaicus. The Difference between this Degree and all others, they make to consist in sour Particulars. 1. Moses had no Dreams nor Visions 2. He had Light from God immediately, without the Ministry or Interposition of Angels. 3. His Mind was never disturbed or dismayed by the prophetick Instruence, For God spake to bim as a Man speaks to bis Friend. 4. He could prophesy at all Times when he would; whereas others prophesy'd

DISCOURSE VI. 169 only at particular Times, when the Word of God came to them.

Another chief Dignity belonging to Mofes, and in which the Prophets under the Law were not like unto him, is, that he was a Lawgiver. No Prophet after Mofes was fent with fuch a Commission, during the Time of the Law; and yet the Prophet here foretold was evidently to refemble Moses in this Particular. " He was to speak all that God " commanded bim; and whoever hearkened " not to bim, was to be destroyed." Moses had no greater Authority than this, nor can any Words describe a greater. Besides, there is a Circumstance belonging to this Prophecy, which ties it down, I think, to this Senfe. Moses says, God will raise up unto thee a Prophet like unto me, according to all that thou defiredft of bim in Horeb, in the Day of the Assembly, faying. Let me not bear again the Voice of the Lord my God; neither let me see this great Fire any more, that I die not. And the Lord faid unto me, they have well spoken - I will raise them up a Prophet from among their Brethren like unto thee, and will put my Words in bis Mouth, and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him, &c.

It is to be observed, that this Request of

S.

of

d

e,

is

CS

b.

ly

^{*} See Smith's felett Discourfes, Page 261.

the People was made at the giving of the Law in Horeb: Moses had often prophesied to them before, and they were not put under any Terror by it; but when the Law was delivered. and God descended in Fire, and the whole Mount quaked greatly, they defired that Moles might speak to them, and not God, left they should die: Upon this the Promise is given, I will raise them a Prophet like unto thee, and but my Words in his Meuth. Is it not evident. that this new Prophet was to do that, in a familiar gentle way, which God himfelf did in the Mount, surrounded with Maeisty and Terror? And was not that the giving of the Law? To apply this Promise to any thing elfe, is making it to have no relation to the Request upon which its was granted. The People liked Moses his ordinary way of prophelying to them so well, that they defired he might be employed to deliver God's Laws to them in the fame manner that he delivered God's other Commands: The Request related therefore merely to the Manner of God's giving his Law; they were under no Uneafiness at his Method in conveying Prophecies to them: And consequently the Promise of God must relate to the giving of a Law to his People, by one to be raifed up among themselves, and not merely to a Succession of Prophets,

n

to

de

afi fta

Sta

Bu dre me

he

the hir

thi all

mi

fes Fa

ing plie Th

be

Prophets, about which the People were in no Diffress.

Laftly, If we enquire, from bistorical Evidence, after the Completion of this Prophecy, we shall find, that it did mon puridually agree to the Character of our bleffed Saviour, and not to any other Prophet, either before or after him; all the Prophets of the Old Testament faw Visions, and dreamed Dreams; all the Prophets of the New were in the fame State. St. Peter had a Vision, St. John faw Visions, St. Paul had Visions and Dreams: But Christ himself neither faw Vision, nor dreamed a Dream, but had intimate and immediate Communication with the Father; he was in the Father's Bosom, he and no Man else had feen the Father, was one with the Father, and had the Fulness of the Godbead in him. Let any Man now ferioufly confider this; Mofes and Christ are the only Two, in all the facred History, who had this Communication with God: The Likeness to Mofes is faid directly to lie in this, of feeing God Face to Face. Can the Promise then of raifing a Prophet like unto Moses be possibly applied to any other Person than Christ Jesus? The other Part of the Parallel needs not to be infifted on; that Christ was a Lawgiver, will

will be eafily admitted on all Hands. But the Execution of the Threat, annexed to this Prophecy, is too remarkable to be passed over in Silence; it has been literally sulfilled upon the whole Nation; every Man who considers the State of the Jews, from the Rejection of Christ to this Day, must own, that this Part of the Prophecy, at least, has been punctually verified.

This Prophecy, and many others, seem, as I observed, intended for the Jews principally, to prepare them betimes for the Reception of a new Lawgiver, and to intimate to them, that the Mosaic Covenant was not

to be perpetual.

Thus have I gone thro' the several Periods of Prophecy under the Old Testament, and endeavoured to shew the main Design and Use of it, opening a Way to a fair and impartial Consideration of the particular Prophecies relating to each Period. I conceived it seasonable, at a Time when the Argument from Prophecy was exposed to open Ridicule, to suggest some proper Observations on the Subject, for the Assistance of serious Minds disposed to consider; to throw in one Mite, as an Offering to the Love of Christ, and his Gospel, in which I hope to live and to die.

THREE

II

II



THREE

DISSERTATIONS.

- I. The Authority of the Second Epistle of St. PETER.
- II. The Sense of the Antients before Christ, upon the Circumstances and Consequences of the FALL.
- III. The Bleffing of JUDAH, Gen. xlix.



AHT.

DISSERTATIONS

The The Authority of the Bacoul

If The Sente of the Antients Levels of Christ, appn the Circumstances and Consequences of the Falls.

an

W

it

W

on

1

III. The Blading of Junan. Co.

- course Weigner, which

The transfer of the second



DISSERTATION L

The Authority of the Second Epiftle of St. PETER.

HE Occasion I had in the First of the forgoing Difcourses, to consider and compare together the Two Epistles of St. Peter, led me to

enquire into the Grounds and Reasons of the ancient Doubt, concerning the Authority and Genuineness of the second Epistle. It will be worth while to examine the Fact, and state it fairly, which will enable us to judge whether this Doubt is well founded or no.

The learned Grotius, in his Annotations on this Epiftle, observes, "That many of the Antients were of Opinion that this "was not an Epistle of St. Peter the Apo"stle, induced thereunto by the Difference of Style between this and the first Epistle, "acknow-

and eforthe in spages. Like, 3. cap. 3. vide cap. a

176 DISSERTATION I.

W

fel

Sc

Wa

Tr

the

cire

Chu

rejec

had

ftron

the 1

more

Antiq

tranffr

which

but fu Donbt

o judg

pappen

otice f it:

y my, ? ers in

. Quart

iore disso

W

" (acknowledged by Eufebius and Ferom) and " by this Epistle's having been rejected by " many Churches." Huetius * reports the Case more accurately, and tells us, that this fecond Epistle was " inter dubias collocata ab " aliquibus - propter ftyli cum priore discre-" pantiam; " reckoned doubtful by some, because the Style of it was different from that of the first Epistle. This is the Truth of the Case, and this the only Reason, to be found in Antiquity, of the Doubt concerning this Epiftle. Grotius's second Reason, that this Epistle was not received in many Churches, is too strongly expressed, and not sufficiently warranted. Origen is the first, as far as appears, who mentions the Doubt about this Epistle: St. Peter, he tellsus, left one Epistle confessedly his; perhaps too a second; for of this there is Doubt + Eusebius informs us, That there never was any Doubt of St, Peter's first Epiftle: But as to the second, the Tradition was, that it was not Canonical: Nevertheless appearing to many, (or to the generality) to be a useful Piece, it was used jointly with the other Scriptures . That this fecond Epiftle

† Helpes - puar emission operationer un la serent er, es al. nas deulepar aupstanneras pap. Origen. apud Eule. 6. cap. 25.

THE SE DEPOLLETHE QUITE SENTEPAR, OUR ENSIABRING PLES SINGL марымфары, отто де жолуоге хънгте фания, теля см. ст. Awr sowed adu yeaper. Lib. 3. cap. 3. vide cap. 25.

was received and used by the Church in Eufebius's Time, appears I think from this very
Passage: He says it was used with the other
Scriptures, and that all the Ground there
was to doubt of its Authority, was an antient
Tradition, which probably was no other than
the Authority and Report of Origen before
eited. That this Doubt ever affected whole
Churches, or that there were Churches which
rejected this Epistle, does not appear: If this
had been the Case, it would have been a
stronger Objection against the Authority of
the Epistle, than the antient Suspicion, and
more worthy of the Historian's Notice.

What Submission is due to the Doubts of Antiquity, when we have only the Doubt transmitted to us, without the Reasons upon which it was grounded, I need not enquire; but furely when we have the Reasons of the Doubt preserved, we have a very good Right to judge and enquire for ourselves: And this sappens to be the Case here: St Jerom takes notice of this Doubt, and tells us the Reason of it: The second Epistle, says he, is rejected to my, (or my most, a plerisque) because it differs in Style from the Pirst.

t

f

n

to

be tle

23

Sib.

MY.

The Hieron Cara S

Quarum secunda à plerisque rejicitur propter styli cum iore dissonantiam. Catal. Script. Eccles.

The whole Doubt, you see, is founded upon a Piece of Criticism, started at first probably by some Man of Learning and Figure, and followed implicitly by others. The Usage and Authority of the Church, for ought that appears to the contrary, were on the side of the Possible, and prevailed at last against the searned Observation: Which was the very Case of St. Jude's Epistle, which for a like Reason, was rejected by many, but the general Authority of the Church prevailed to establish it; Autoritatem vetustate & usa menuit, & inter sanctas Scripturas computatur.

ic

D

C

th

be

W

tio

per

app

fall

be

Paf

and

diffe

clipe

Paff

this

St. 7

OWE

of di

in hi Case,

appea

Part (

That there is a Difference in the Style of the first and second Epistle of St. Peter, is allowed; but it is not such a Difference a ought to create any Doubt of the Genuin-ness of the Epistle. One Reason is, because this Difference of Style does not run the the whole Epistle, but affects only one Part of it; another Reason is, that this Difference may be more probably accounted for, that by supposing the second Epistle to come from another Hand than the first.

The second Epistle is divided into the Chapters; the first and the third sand class of this Difficulty, agreeing very well with

30

[#] Hieron, Catal, Script, Eccli

DISSERTATION L

on bly

ind

age

hat

of

the

сгу ike

ne-

to

me

of

is

: 25

ne-

né

100

art

the Style of the first Episte. The freend Chapter is foll of bold Figures, and abounds in pampous Words and Expressions; It is a Description of the falle Prophets and Teach ers, who insected the Church, and perverted the Doctrines of the Gospel; andrit seems to be an Extract from fome antient Jewish Writer, who had left behind him a Descripe tion of the false Prophets of his own of perhaps carlier Times; which Description is applied both by St. Peter and St Jude to the falls Teachers of their own Times, If this be the Cale, where is the Wonder that ? Paffage transcribed from another Author. and inferted into this second Episte. should differ in Style from St. Peter's first Epistle? effecially confidering that the Style of this Passage differs as much from all the sest of this feeond Epittle, as is does from the first. St. ferom * supposed, and others + have followed his Opinion, that St. Peter made use of different Interpreters to express his Sense in his two Epiffles; but had this been the Case, the Difference of Style would have appeared in the subole Epifile, and not in our Part of it only, which is the present State;

bach an one as is would b

Epiff. ad Hedibiam qualitation na ni ber + Eftius, Calmet, &c.

And I see no Reason to think that St. Peter did not write both his Epistles himself.

Were this nothing but a Conjecture, yet fo reasonable an one it is, that the Doubt raised against this second Epistle, merely from this Difference of Style, could hardly stand before it. But we can go surther, and shew upon very probable Grounds that this was indeed the Case.

A

21

T

de

no

fo

th

7

of

In

lik

nia

the

Ep

Ex

Ma

Th

in i

ble

and

Jud

The very Beginning of the second Chapter of this fecond Epistle shews that St. Peter had the Image of some antient falle Prophets before him, in describing the falle Teachers of his own Time: There were false Prophets also among the People, even as there shall be false Teachers among you, ver. 1. If you confider the Character he gives of these falle Teachers, it will appear to be drawn from the Description of the old fale Prophets; fuch they are, he tells us, as how for faken the right Way, and are gone aftrey, following the Way of Balaam, the Son of Bofor, who leved the Wages of Unrighteousness, ver. 15. A very natural Thought this, and to be expected, in a Description of false Prophets made by an antient Jewish Writer; but fuch an one as hardly would have occurred in an original Description of the false Teachers

et

ot y

y

is

t.

le

Se

re

as

er.

108

be

le

100

57,

10-

efs,

md

10-

er; ur-

alfe

ers

Teachers under the Gospel. St. Jude has this Comparison, and others of the same kind joined with it: They have gone in the Way of Cain, and ran greedily after the Error of Balaam, and perished in the Gainsaying of Core, ver. 11. These are antique Figures, and discover the Age to which they belong: And St. Jude tells us plainly that these false Teachers were wares wpore for there is the to the there described or set forth of old for this Condemnation; and it is very likely that both St. Peter and he had the old Description before them, when they gave the Character of the false Teachers of their own Times. St. Jude's Epistle is so like the second Chapter of St. Peter's second Epistle, the Figures and Images in both are so much the same, as likewise the antient Examples and Instances made use of, that it has been commonly thought that St. Jude copied after St. Peter's Epistle: And yet the Turn of Words and Expressions are so different; the Choice of Matter likewise is in part so different, some Things being mentioned in one, and omitted in the other; that it is much more probable that both copied from the same Original, and drew from it according to their own Judgments. I will give some Instances of this. N 3

this, and leave the rest to the Reader's burn Examination:

St. Peter, ver. 4. Eigs o Ogis algiλων άμαρτησαν Ιων ουκ εφεισατο, αλλα ζαpais ζόφυ ταρίαρώ-σαι, wapidwner eis xplote reinpulcives.

Ver. 6. 11 Acre 20-Topecppas Topecppas Toφρώσας καλας ροφή κα-Texener. 1000 H) μα μελλονίων ασεβείν π-Beixws.

Ver. 11. 17 / 18 A 7 / 18 A 01 logoi & Burdue wei-Coves ovies, & pepuar κατ' αυτών παρα Κυcia Branghuoy xei- meet To Medies Co-Tiv.

St. Jude, ver. 6. Almenus TE TESTEN mphoarlas 7 αρχίω, αλλα άπολι-חסידם: זף ולוסי סוצו-Theres, ers repiets peryears Tulpas, Jesperis albiois too go pou rethonxen.

fo

C

الم

VC

tiu

me

St

of

St.

A

rel

are

ver

Re

wi

Th

Mi

the

give

Mi

wit

dur

tion

The

mer

cou

Vet . 7. Q. Sodo ma & Popoppa, & a שבו בעדמו הפאפו ל פעוסוסף דשדסוב, דפסחסו ειπορνουσασαι, ή απελθέσαι οπίσω (αρx de l'tepus

Ver. 9. Oww. xana o apxagisho, ore my dialing dia Represent Significan destille of the Maros N. T. A.

St. Peter speaks of the Angels that finned; St. Jude gives an Account of their Sin that they kept not their first Estate, but left their own Habitation: This Account of the Angels Sin is no where elfe to be found in Scrip-

Scripture, but was, if I may guels, in the old Book from which St. Jude transcribed; for it is very unlikely that he thould add thefe Circumstances, if he had only St. Peter's alyther augrecenter before him. The very same Difference may be observed in letting forth the Example of Sodem and Go. merrab, which is common to both Epiftles; St. Peter freaks only of their Judgment, and of their being made an Example to Sinners: St. Jude adds an Account of their Crimes And tho', as far as the two Epifiles agree in respect to this Inflance, the Images and I deas are the fame, yet the Turn of Expression is very different. Again, St. Peter, ver. 11. in Reproof of the Presumptuous and Selfwill'd, who fpeak evil of Dignities; lays, That Angels, which are greater in Power and Might, bring not railing Accusations against them before the Lord; but here St. Jude has given us the History to which this belongs, Michael the Arch-Angel, when contending with the Devil about the Body of Moses, durft not bring against bim a railing Accusation, but faid, the Lord rebuke thee, ver. 9. These Instances shew that St. Jude did not merely copy from St. Peter, but had Recourse to the Original infelf, where these In-Rances N 4

Stances flood recorded, and took from thence fuch Circumstances as he thought proper to let these Examples in their full Light.

If we compare the different Manners of expressing the same thing in the two Epi-Itles, we shall hardly imagine that St. Peter and St. Fude had the same Language before them to transcribe; it is much more probable that they both translated from forme old Hebrew Book; which will account for the Difference of Language between them, and the great Agreement in their Images and Ideas. The following Instances will make my Meaning plains I soo toy south sid at

Καὶ πόλας Σοδό- 'Ως Σόδομα ή Γόμων η Γομορρας το μορρα κ. τ. λ. περ φρωσας κατασερφή κανίαι δείγμα, πυxalinerrer, unoder- es aimris d'inhuviti-Les Televale Cer TEBEROS.

Ver. 10. Mahira Ver. 8. Opolos δέ τος οπισω σαρχός μέντοι η έτοι δνυποιέν δπουμία μιασμό αζόμου, δάρκα μή ש סףבשטענישנ, אַ אַטפַוֹּים ענמוֹשִקנ, אַטפּוּנידודם, тит Филатафронинтав, обе адетия, вобав ві πολμηταίς αυθάδας, βλασφημέσιν. Difar itre Orginal BANG Langue of a street Quasites"

2 Peter ii. ver. 6. St. Jude, ver. 7.

Ver.

to

ar

ar

m

Se th

W D

th

G

W

to.

Se

are

fup

the

Co

an

Ver. 12. Οῦτοι 3, Ver. 10. Οῦτοι δὶ εἰς ἀλογαζῶα φυσικά, ο σα μεν έκ οἰδασι γεννημένα εἰς ἀλωσιν βλασφημέσον ὅσα φυμοῦσι βλασφημέντες, ζῶα, ἐπίς ανται, ἀν τη φθορς αὐτών, τέποιε φθείρονται. καταφθαρώσον αι.

In these Instances the Language of St. Jude is much plainer and simpler than St. Peter's, and represents the Meaning common to both Epiftles, much more intelligibly; and whoever will be at the Pains to examine the two Epiftles carefully, will find more Instances of this kind; where the Sentiments and Notions are the fame, and the Manners of Expression very different, Whence can proceed this Agreement and Disagreement at once? Had one transcribed the other, or had both copied from the fame Greek Author, the Language of one Epistle would probably have answered more nearly to the Language of the other; and yet the Sentiments and Notions of the two Epiftles. are so much the same, that we must needs suppose the two Writers to follow one and the same Copy; and if we suppose this Copy to have been in the Jewish Language, and that each Writer translated for himself.

1-

4,

Si.

647

er.

this will answer the whole Appearance, and account as well for their Difference as their Agreement. The Difference which appears in the parallel Places last quoted, may instead be accounted for upon the Supposition that St. Jude transcribed from St. Peter. He might intend perhaps to make plain the abstruce Passages, and to that end might make Choice of a plainer way of expressing himself. But the former Passages cannot be thus accounted for, which will appear if we consider further:

fu

It

th

pi

fo

ne

th

fa

in

Su

the

Va

Pr

N

to

rel

fup

ith

anti

COL

to

ren

fery

of

Sty

to

That the Subject-Matter, common to these two Epistles, was without doubt taken from some old Jewish Author by one or both of these Writers. That St. Jude had the old Book before him, and did not merely copy after St. Peter, is evident, for he exprefly quotes Enoch, meaning either a Book under that Name and Title, or, which is more probable, fome antient Book of Jewish Traditions, in which some Prophecies of Enoch were recorded. St. Jude, by telling us whence be had bis Description of the falle Prophets, has informed us at the fame time whence St. Peter had the Materials of the fecond Chapter of his fecond Epiftle; which is the very fame Description, with fuch

fuch Varieties, as have already been observed It is very remarkable, that notwithflanding this great Agreement between the two Epiftles, St. Peter has an infrance not to be found in St. Jude; and St. Jude has another! not to be found in St. Peter. St. Jude quotes the Prophecy of Enech, of which St. Peter fays nothing'; St. Peter refers to the Preaching of Noab, of which St. Jude fays nothing : Supposing one to be a mere Transcriber of the other, it is hard to account for this Variation; especially, considering that the Preaching referred to by St. Peter, under the Name of Noab, and the Prophecy referred to by St. Jude, under the Name of Bnoch; relate to one and the fame thing, the Defruction of the old World. But if you will suppose both Apostles to use an antionr Yewis Book, in which the Prophecies of Enoch and Noah, relating to the Flood, were recorded, it is easy to account for the Reference to Noab by St. Peter, to Enoch by St. Jude.

This may serve to account for the different Styles in St. Peter's two Epistles, observed of old: I add, and for the Difference of Style, in the second Epistle itself; for the Style of the second Chapter is no more like to that of the other two, than it is to that

of the first Epistle. When a Man expresses his own Sentiments, he writes in his own proper Style, be it what it will; but when he translates from another, he naturally sollows the Genius of the Original, and adopts the Figures and Metaphors of the Author before him. The Eastern Languages abound in high swelling Ways of Expression; and you may find in this one Chapter of St. Peter more Resemblance of this manner than in any other Part of the New Testament; which is a further Confirmation of the Account which I have given.

But if this will help to clear one Difficulty, will it not necessarily subject this second Epistle of St. Peter to another? It is an old Objection against the Authority of St. Jude's Epistle, that he quotes the spurious Book of Enoch, and for this very Reason * his Epistle was placed among the arrangement, or doubtful, by the Antients. And is not Peter's second Epistle become liable to the very same Charge?

0

B

ft

q

ti

F

21

le

in ki

Ca

of

fir

T

an

of

Bo

Judas frater Jacobi parvam, quæ de septem catholicis est, Epistolam reliquit. Et quia de Libro Enoch, qui Apocryphus est, in ca assumit testimonium, à plerisque rejicitur. Tamen autoritatem vetustate jam & usu meruit, & intersanctas Scripturas comparatur. Hieron, Catalog. Script. Eccl.

I will not trouble the Reader with a long. Account, or any Account of the spurious Book under the Name of Enoch, which made a very early Appearance in the Christian Church, and is quoted by Irenaus Origen, and others about the same Time. Whoever pleases to know the State of this Book, may confult Fabricius, in his Codex Pfeud. Vet. Teft. But, de des modifico M

odinA

'Tis no Wonder that fome antient Chriflians, who took it for granted that St. Jude quoted the fame Book, which they had under the Name of Enoch, made it an Objection against the Authority of his Epistle, For this Book Enoch was a mere Romance. and full of the idle Inventions of some Hellenistic Yew. But then there is not the least Evidence that this spurious Book was extant in the Days of the Apostles; nor indeed any kind of Proof that St. Jude quotes a Book called Enoch; it is more likely that he quoted fome antient Book containing the Traditions of the Yewifb Church, which has been long fince loft; and probably contained many Things relating to other antient Patriarche and Prophets, as well as to Enoch. The Lois of which was miferably supplied by forging Books under the Names of the Patriarchs!

To this we owe the Life of Adam, the Book of Seth, the Testaments of the Patriarchs, and many others of the like nature, which were spread abroad in very early Days of the Church.

What the true antient Book was which St. Jude quoted, by whom penn'd, or what Authority it had in the Yewish Church, no Mortal can tell: This only we know, it was not among their Canonical Books But let the Book be supposed to have been of as little Authority as you pleafe, yet if it contained a good Description of the antient falle Prophets, why might not St. Peter and St. Jude make use of that Description, as well as St. Paul quote Heathen Poets? St. Peter plainly makes no other Use of it, and therefore stands clear of countenancing the Authority of the Books St Jude goes further, and duotes a Prophecy out of it, as being an authentic one; and can you tell that it was not an authentic Prophecy & L'am fure the Prophocy itelf, as reported in St. Jude's Epiftle was well founded, and was duly accomplished; and is in truth but the very Prophecy which came from God to Nagh and very probably had been communicated by fore to Enoch, and by him so the old World Was it ever made an Objection against the Authorit!

W

le

Authority of St. Paul's fecond Epifile to Timothy, that he quotes some antient Apocryphal Book for the Story of James and Jambres? Or is it any Diminution to the Authority of the Gospel, that our Saviour (as many Learned think) quotes another fuch Book, under the Title of the Wifdom of God, and appeals to it, as containing setient Prophecies? If not how comes it to be an Objection against St. Judea Epitte, that be quotes a Prophecy of Enoch from the like Authority? ves O wir

For these Reasons little Regard is due to the Objection of the Antients against the Authority of St. Jude's Epiffle: They fupposed their spurious extravagant Book Enoch, to be the Book quoted by St. Jude; and they reasoned upon this Supposition; for which in the mean time there was not the least Apparance of Proof or Evidence, and the Epitholitical was univerfally received in the Churches, norwithflunding this Piece of Criticism, as we are informed by St. Teron. in the Passage before quoted.

There are indeed forme Notions in which there two Epiftles agree, and which could not possibly be drawn from any antient Jewish Book; for these Notions, of which I

mi

now speak, are Christian Notions peculiar to the Times of the Gospel.

The Passages which shew this Agreement, are these chiefly which follow:

2 Peter ii.

Ver. I. Ψουδοδιδασκαλοι, οίπνες παρεισάξυσιν αἰρέσεις απωλείας, η τ αγοράσαντα αὐτὰς δεσσότω αρνέμενος.

Ver. 13. Σπίλοι χ μωμοι, εντρυφώντες ον ταπαταις αυτών, συνουωχυμβρος υμίν.

tile Regard is due to

Ch. iii. 2, 3. Mon
mind i weekenpling

pulation in it and any inv

pulation in it i and

color illing correct

To who is every and

norms, on elegant

the any in it is

the any in the in

fice any in the in

more of plugger.

Authors Spuline Const.

Re

bo

tio

fub

Th

anf

and

fam

as it

dria

of a

and

mean

lates

princ

St. 7

for h

OWD

and i

ferenc

file, a

o and

this fe

Epiftle

becies

I

Ver. 4. Παρασεδυσταν γαρ τινες ανθρωσιος,—ασεδώς, 4 πη Θευ γαριν με ναθιθέν είν ασέλγω αν, 2 η μονον δευνών τιω Θευν 2 Κύριος ήμων Ιπουν Χρισιν ώρου γεμλυσι.

Ver. 12. Ούτομος ον το το αναπαις υμών σπλάδες, ζωσυωχά μίσι.

Vet. 17; 18. Τμεί Το τών βηματών τών περειρημένων υπό τών απος όλων πε Κυρίν ημών Ιησύ Χρις ο Οπ ελεγον υμιν; οπι τα εμπαίνται, καία τας εαυτών επιπυμιας πορούομμος τών απος ξεκών:

Luke zi. so

In

In the first of these Passages the Happers of St. Jude has a plain Resemblance and Reserves to the Happers square of St. Peter; both Words are formed upon the same Notion, and are meant to describe the Crast and subtle Instituation of the new false Teachers. The turning xapper as activities in St. Jude, answers the appears are nearly the same, and refer to Gospel Notions.

If the second Passage of St. Peter be read, as it ought to be, according to the Alexandrian Manuscript, which has a page instead of a maraic, it agrees exactly with St. Jude's; and the Feasts peculiar to Christians, are meant in both Places. The third Passage relates to the Apostles of Christ; and it is the principal Passage to incline one to think that St. Jude had St. Peter's Epistle before him; for he seems to take what is proper to his own Purpose, and the Subject of his Epistle; and to leave that which has a peculiar Reference to the former Part of St. Peter's Epistle, and to which there is nothing in his own to answer: St. Peter in the first Chapter of this second Epistle, and likewise in his first Epistle, tells the Christians of the antient Probecies, fore-shewing the Deliverance near at hand:

hand: He warns them likewise against the new falle Teachers in this second Epistle: Therefore collecting the Purpose of his Epifiles, he fays that he wrote to them to remind them, r. Of the Words which were spoken before by the boly Prophets: 2. And of the Command of the Apostles, which Command respected the Scoffers in the last Days. But St. Yude, who had faid nothing of the antient Prophecies, and had toent his whole Epiftle in describing the Iniquity of the falle Teachers, reminds them only of the Words Spoken by the Apostles of Christ Jesus, who had, together with the Doctime delivered to them, forewarned them, that there should be Mockers in the last Time.

I fee no Inconvenience in supposing that St. Jude had as well the Epiftle of St. Peter, as the old Jewifb Book, which contained the Description of the antient false Prophets and the Prophecy of Enoch concerning them, before him at the fame time. If these last Passages prove that he had St. Peter's Episte, his express quoting of Enoch shews that he had the other. In following the old Book, and enlarging from thence the Instances made use of by St. Peter, and expressing in Words of his own the Sentiments of the

bear

original

to th

C

co

th

fur

he

wes

Th

Nu

here Rar

tion

fay :

peal

Chri

Aut

other

appe had]

ter i

Verfi of U But

Copie

original Author, without confining himfelf to the Version of St. Peter, he did no more than is natural for any Man to do in a like Case. But perhaps there may be another Account to be given of this Agreement between these two Epistles, hy referring them to some further common Source or Original.

St. Jude callsupon the Christians to whom he wrote to remember Tor puputor specipilistor Des TOT ATOS SAME TE KUPIE Willow Lyou Xpise, The Words which were spoken before of the Apostles of Christ. They who do not place St. Jude in the Number of Apostles, are under no Difficulty here; it was natural for one of a lower Rank to refer to the Authority and Predictions of Christ's Apostles. But what must we fay for St. Peter, who makes the same Appeal, and was undoubtedly an Apostle of Christ himself? Did he think that he had less Authority, or was less to be regarded than other Apostles? Or for what Reason did he appeal to that Authority in others, which he had Right to infift on himself? This Matter is something mended by our English Version, Be mindful - of the Commandment of US, the Apostles of the Lord and Saviour. But the Order of the Words in our Greek Copies will not bear this rendering, To Agreement

è

ds

0

to

be

at

6-

ed

ets

m,

aft le,

he

ok.

ces

g in

the inal

we was To answer our Vertion, we must read MHENT TON ANDSONET: Thus St. Paul Stren fpeaks. you Hauns, I Paul: But never Hauns syon Paul I. And fince there is evidently a Diflocation of the Word num in St. Peter, and it must be placed elsewhere, it ought probably to be placed as St. Jude has placed it, after Kupis; and then the English Vertion mult be thus - The Commandment of the Apollies

h

13

th 15

A

T

P

te ar

fig

th

fa

CÓ

CO

Ve

th

A

flie

pel

wh

of

m

of our Lord and Saviour.

There must be something particular in this Case; otherwise for an Apostle to appeal to the Authority of Apostles, as something fuperior to his own, is not very natural. But if we suppose that the Apostles had a Meeting upon this great Case of the new falle Teachers, and that they have jointly, by common Confent and Deliberation, Precepts proper to the Occasion, to be communicated to all Churches, ino fingle Apostle would, or could, in this Case, call the common Injunction bis Commandment, but would serrainly call it, in the Language of St. Peter, the Commandment of the Apolles of our Lord St Paul was an Apostle, yet was it no Difparagement to him to carry the Decree of the Council of Ferufalem to the Churches of his Plantation; and in writing or speaking he could

DISSERTATION

could not but have called it the Decree of the Apostles The Case might be the fame And with St. Feler's likewife. - Who hash

We have some Evidence to thew that this was the Cafe. That there was fuch a Tradition, at least the the Church is evident from the Apostolicus Constitutions . In which there is mention midde of a Meeting of the Apofiles upon the very Account of thefe falle Teachdisio for particularly described by St. Peter and Sm Jink In the thirteenth Chapt terrof the finth Books thefet falle Teachers are described ad be fuch as acquest Xasa and Mison, fight dgains Christ and Moses, pretending at the fame time to value both : And thus the false Teachers, mentioned in both Epiftles. communicated with the Church, whilft they corrapted to Faith: They were, man avantis countries Spotenien the Churches Feafts, Jude, ver, 12: They are ordered to be expelled in the Appficial Constitutions, that the Lambs might be preferved the sat arriva. found, and without Spot . They are represented in the Apostolical Constitutions, as the fulle Chrifians and false Prophers for stold in the Gofpel. — Bio Brancopulares was rel pur auto marante pares which agrees exactly with St. Jude's Account of them, - that they had been foretold by 0 3 the

a-

be

he he

10

marla

198 DISSERTATION L

the Apostles, and that they denied the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ, ver. 4. And with St. Peter's likewise, — Who bring in damnable Heresses, denying the Lord that bought them, Chap. ii. ver. 1. t

n

R

0

W

W

ce

100

to

T

ter Pla

of

71910

me

me Sal

At this Meeting, 'tis said, Instructions were given to be communicated to all Churches by their respective Apostles and Bishops; there were probably then many circular Letters sent upon this Occasion; the second Epistle of St. Peter and St. Jude's Epistle seem to be of this sort; and being drawn upon the same Occasion, and upon the same Instructions, it is no wonder they agree so well together.

There are in the Epiftles themselves some Marks which confirm the foregoing Account: The very Word [proper] used by St. Peter, when he makes mention of the Apostles Authority, points out some particular and distinguished Precept: For he does not seem to refer to the general Preaching, or Doctrines of the Apostles, but to some see cial Command, or Form of Doctrine relating to the salse Teachers. This is that the sale seems where some mentioned in the Close of the foregoing Chapter, the Commandment delivered to the Faithful, to guard them against the Corruptions of the salse Teachers, and to shew them

them the older the Sinappures, the Way of Righteousness. This Warning, so solemnly given, would, as the Apostle insists, be an Aggravation in the Case of all such as having been made thus acquainted with the Way of Righteousness, should nevertheless turn aside in the wayas obeions arrows arrange, from the boly Commandment delivered unto them.

St. Jude plainly fays, that his Epistic was wrote purely upon the Account of the false Teachers: That his Intentions were to have written to them, was the source of the common Doctrines of Salvation; but that he had quitted the Defigur, being necessitated (anagent exes) to write to them to strive for the Faith delivered to the Saints in Opposition to the false Teachers, who had stollen in among them.

The Sense of this Passage is lost in our Translation, as it is likewise in both the Interpretations proposed by Erasmus upon the Place, in which he has been followed by most of those who came after him. Interpreters have been missed by confounding the win out was and the warm together, as if they meant one and the same thing, whereas they mean quite different Things. The common Salvation here spoken of, mean the Document

ır

x

T

ıg

R.

0-

to

15-

W

m

0 4

trines

200 DISSERTATION L

fu

fig

pi

to

T

th

m

of

th

W

W

qu

ve

be

Ma

18,

fai

a L

to

pr

m

St

afi

to

trines of the Gospel published to all the World, without Respect to Difference of Times or Seasons, or to particular Doctrines of the Corrupters of the Faith: The wante fine wisis is the fame with the warestone strong in St. Peter, the Form of found Doctrine, fent to all the Churches, by Direction of the Apostles, in Opposition to the false Teach-This then is the Meaning of St. Jude, and thus it may be paraphrased: "Beloved, "I was intent upon the Delign of writing " to you upon the common Doctrines and " Hopes of the Gospel, for the Improve-" ment of your Faith and Knowledge in " Christ Jesus; but I find myself obliged to " lay aside this Design, and to warn you a-" gainft a present Danger, to exhort you to "Earnestness in contending for that true Doctrine once already delivered to you " and all the Faithful, in Opposition to the " false Teachers, who are crept in unaware Place, in which he has been to Lucy grome A

The Arabic and Ethiopic Versions have both preserved this Sense in some measures the Arabic comes very near the true Meanings the Sense of which the Latin Interpreter has thus expressed: O diletti mei, omni Studio adhibito ut scribtrem vobis de fahut perfecta

perfecte universali, etque communi, contini sum scribere vobis, deprecans ut soliciti sitis in side qua semeltradite est sanction. The Edbiopic Version speaks of this Haidanca delivered to the Sainte as superadded to the common Teaching, and consequently as distinct from the normal the common Salvation.

But to comemerer our Point, the Agrees ment of the two Epiflissin the Deleviption of the falfa Teachers, it is to be observed that both St. Peter and St. Jude profess to write a sreminding their Churches of Things with which they had before been made ac quainted. * St. Jude says expresly that the very Subject of this Letter had once already been known unto them: voopment & vpas Burbца, нботає праз ажаў тите, оті о хирівь хаог як энь Агрижle, R. T. A. The Word (anak) used here is the same we met with before; the anal wesas office wisis and the aforas upas arak turo, are relative to the same Matter; and it appears that the Warning against the false Teachers, and the prophetic Description of them, were sent to the Churches, together with the (errow) Com-It appears likewife, that both mandment. St. Peter and St. Jude wrote their Epiftles after this Commandment had been delivered to the several Churches; for they write to

compare 2 Peter iii. ver. 2, with Jude ver. 5.

0

1

14

uit

a la

them, reminding them of what they had before received.

This being the Case, there is no Necessity to suppose that St. Jude transcribed St. Peter's Epistle; it is much more probable that both he and St. Peter wrote from the common Plan communicated to the Churches, and drew their Description of the false Teachers from the same Apocryphal Book. But be this as it will, yet upon all Views the second Epistle of St. Peter stands clear of the old Objection drawn from the Difference of Style between his first and second Epistles.



The same acceptance of the same acceptance of

Line we with he were the area or sand

St. Peter sont on Mark wides their Epubles effect being delivered the check being Community over the theory with an accept for they with an

ment Cancelles and the state of the party of the ment of the party of

Die

TI

the

to

Su

Pre

Ci

fre

YC



DISSERTATION IL

The Sense of the Antients before CHRIST upon the Circumstances and Consequences of the Fall.

CONCONCONCONCONCONCONCONCON



Y Intention is not to fearch after Passages in Heathen Authors, which may seem to bear some Resemblance to the Mosaic Hi-

flory of the Fall, but to trace the Sense of the Jewish Church as far as it can be collected.

As there are no Records left, but the Books of the Old Testament, to give Light to this Enquiry, and no Book of the Old Testament, after Moses, treats directly of this Subject, it cannot be expected that I should produce a full and regular Exposition of the Circumstances and Consequences of the Fall, from so sew Remains, and in this respect so very imperfect. All that can be done, is to gather

W

to

fai

Bi

R

cti

G

th

W

w

ad

Re

ha

N

aŝ

fer

N

pe

fol

th

THE

tef

rei

lak

Is

W

the

gather up the little which fell from these old Writers, rather accidentally, than purposely and to try whether, from their References and Allusions to this History, we can, with any tolerable degree of Probability, collect their Sense, or the Sense of the Times in which they lived, upon this Subject. The historical Writers of the old Testament were never led within View of this antient Story, by the Occurrences in which they are concerned; from them confequently no Light is to be expected. Moral Writers had sometimes Occasion to reflect upon the State of the World, and to confider how Things. came into the State and Condition in which they found them: Prophets likewife, who were Teachers of Religion, were in the same Case; from these we may expect some As. fiftance.

You see within how narrow a Compass we are reduced; but yet no Help, is to be resuled which can be had in so material a Concern.

The moral and theological Difficulties relating to this Point will not be stated or discussed upon the Foot of this Enquiry. It was the Wisdom of Antiquity to bury all such Difficulties in the Abyse of infinite Wisdom

Wildom and Power, and there to leave them fill God thould shink proper to bring them to Light, and had we formething of the fame Spirit, it would be the better for us. But the most Curious and Inquisitive have no Reason to expect a Solution of all the Difficulties of this for from the Teachers of the Gofpel. For what has the Gofpel todo with them? The moral and natural Earls in the World were not increduced by the Cospel; willy then must the Gospel be called upon to account for them, rather than any other Religion, or Sect of Philosphy? If there had never been an Old Testament, never a New one, Manking would have been at leaft as corrupt and milerable as they are at prefene. What Harm then have the Old and New Tellament done to you, that you perpetually challenge them to secount to you forthe Billyon fuffer? You millike perhaps the Story of Halam and Bor, and can by no means diguit the Account of the Serpent's tempting and prevailing against our first Partents: Very well; let this Account then be laid alide, and what are you now the better? Is there not the fame Evil remaining in the World, whether you believe, of believe not the Story of the Fall And if to what Acc Arch count '

count do YOU pretend to give of it? For if you pretend to any Religion, you are as liable to be called to this Account, as any Professor or Teacher of the Gospel, No Body is exempt in this Case, but the Atheist; and his Privilege comes from hence, that he has no Account to give of any thing; for all Difficulties are alike upon this Scheme.

fal

h

on

6

OF

of th

fu

T

25

th

CE

to

m

h

fy

ta

21

B

aj d

0

0

Leaving then these Difficulties, which are common to all Religions, and not peculiar to our present Enquiry, let us proceed to trace the History of the Fall in the antient Wri. ters. Seft of Philosophy

The oldest Book we have remaining is the Book of Job; there is all the Appearance, that can arise from internal Characters, that it was written before any of the Books of Mofes. The Testimony therefore of this Book is distinct from the Authority of Meles, fince it was not derived from the Books of Moles, but was itself an original Account of the State of Nature and Religion in the old World, before Moses had committed any thing to Writing. I know that some have endeavoured to bring down this antient Writer to the Times of the Babylonifb Captivity, and suppose the Book to have been written for the Consolation of the Captives in their Diftress.

ingoo

stress. But if you suppose it written for the fake of the Jews, is it not strange that there should not be, in a Discourse of such a kind, one fingle Word of the Law of Mofes; nor fo much as one diftant Allufion to any Rite or Ceremony of the Law, or any one Piece of History later than Moses; nor to any of the Forms of Idolatry, for which the Jews, fuffered, at the Time of their Captivity? The Conjecture would be as ingenious and as well founded, should any Critic suppose, that the Iliads of Homer were written to celebrate the military Expeditions of the Goths and Vandals: Befides, were it proper to enter into the Discussion of this Point, it might be easily shewed that the Book of Jab had quite another View, than this Opinion supposes. The Patience of Job is much. talked of, and we feldom look further for any Use of this Book: But in truth the Book was written in Opposition to the very antient Opinion, which introduced two independent Principles, one of Good, the other of Evil. For this Reason Satan, the Author of Job's Misfortunes, is brought in with a Permission from God to afflict Job; and the Moral of the History lies in Job's Resection; The Lord gave, and the Lord bath taken a-: your Sufferings as the Book of 763 puts

crony: And again, Shall we receive Good at the Hand of God, and Shall we not receive Evil? In all which, as the History exprelly observes, Job did not fin with his Lips ; intimating how prone Men were to in with their Lips, when they talk d'of the Evils of Life, and the Author of flient. The learned Grotius supposes this Book to be written for the Confolation of the Descendants of Efail carried away in the Babyloni fo Captivity ; he faw plainly, I suppose, that the Book could, by no means, answer to the Cafe of the Tell as well for the Reafons already mentioned, as for this likewise, That the year andoubtelly fuffered for their Imputty ! and the Ex ample of 966, is the Example of an innocent Man haffering for no Demerit of his dwn : Apply this to the Fewr in their Cap tivity and the Book contradicts all the Prophets, before, and at the Time of their Captivity, and is calculated to harden the Yews in their Sufferingly and to reproach the Providence of God. But suppose with for the Children of Efau, they were Idolator, and yet is there no Alluffon to their Idolary in all this Book, and what ground is there to think that they were for ighteous, us to deferve fuch an Interpretation to be pur up on their Sufferings as the Book of Job puts

Sal

Jen ibin

76

any

Que the Wr.

Disc the take Wou thou Earl

Short Mom the H

Cloud Dung been

Eart

on

Sakes? Or can it be imagined, that a Book writ about the Time supposed, for the Use of an idolat rous. Nation, and odious to the Jews, could ever have been received into the Jewish Canon? Whatever therefore we may think of the Book, in its present State, there is little doubt but that it was sormed upon authentick Resords, of greater Antiquity than any Book now remaining.

The Antiquity of the Book supposed, two Questions arise to be considered, s. Whether the Fall of Adam was known to this antient. Writer: 2. What Notion he had of the Circumstances and Consequences of the Fall

The with Chapter of Job contains the Discourse of Sephar the Noamathite, upon the State and Condition of the Wicked: He takes his Rife from the very beginning; his words, in our Translation, are these: Knowell thou not this of old, Ince Man was placed on the Earth, that the Triumbhing of the Wicked:

Short, and the Joy of the Hypotrite but for a Moment? Though his Excellency mount up to the Heavens, and his Head reach unto the Clouds, yet he shall perish for ever like his own Dung. The first Verse might as well have been render'd, Since Adam was placed on the Earth. There is no reason to doubt but that

that this Passage refers to the Fall, and the first Sin of Man: The Date agrees - For the Knowledge here taught is faid to arife from Facts as old as the first placing Man on Earth: The fudden Punishment of the Iniquity corresponds to the Molaick Account -The Triumphing of the Wicked is short, his Joy but for a Moment. Above all, the Nature of the Crime, and of the Punishment here described, are strong Presumptions on this fide: Adam's Ambition was to be like God, and he had the Tempter's Word to affure him he should be so: How aptly is this Ambition described in the Passage before us? Though his Excellency mount up to the Heavens, and bis Head reach unto the Clouds: That is (as the Syriac and Arabic Versions render the Verse) "Though in his Pride he "ascend up to Heaven, yet shall be perish " for ever." Adam's Punishment was Death. To Duft thou fhalt return. The Punishment, as described in the Book of Job, is, - He shall perish for ever; but how, or in what manner? Why, like bis own Dung, i.e. by returning to Earth again. That the Chaldee Paraphrast understood this whole Pasfage to relate to the Fall, feems evident by his Exposition of the fourth Verse, where he takes notice of the Accuser or Tempter,

dadd

pion mon we

To Acc

ir is Spir whi

Par

tem

Mon

the F who

first j

hard

no G ion.

Prosp

troy,

Th

are

r

n

it is

-

ıt

n

te

is

re Le

:

118

36

Ch b.

h-

in

e.

11-

by

re

T,

25

as well as of the Offenders: Gaudium impiorum finitur cito, & latitia delatoris ad momentum. What Delator, or Accuser, do we read of at the Time of Adam's being placed on the Earth, except the Tempter? To whom the Name of the Adversary, or Accuser, was afterwards appropriated; and it is the Character, in this very Book, of the Spirit permitted to plague and torment 7cb; which is one Evidence, by the by, that the Paraphrast understood the same Person to have been concerned in both Cafes; in the tempting of Adam, and in the termenting of Our own Version, the Vulgate and Job. Montanus's agree in one Senfe; The Joy of the HYPOCRITE is but for a Moment: But who is this Hypocrite, appearing at the very full placing of Man on Earth? It was neither Eve nor Adam; they were bold and hardy, and diffrustful of God, but shew'd no Guile or Hypocrify in the whole Transacion. But the Tempter's Part was all Hyocrify; he thew'd great Concern for the rosperity of those whom he meant to detroy, and well deserves this Character; and he Chaldee Paraphraft has reason in fixing t upon him.

The next Passage that occurs, is but a are Allusion to one Circumstance in the P 2 History

10

n

re

ki In

A

of

of th

w

int

pir

an

70

der

100

Paf

Wo

gar

ed

difa

History of the Fall, and that not a very material one. In the xxxist. Chapter Job vindicates his Integrity in many Particulars; one is, that he was ever ready to acknowledge his Errors. Upon which Occasion his Words are - If I covered my Transgressions as Adam, by biding my Iniquity in my Bofom. - The marginal reading of our Bible is - After the manner of Men. Other Verfions give the same Sense. But the Chaldee Paraphrafe agrees with our Translation. The Allusion to Adam's biding bimself is proper and apposite; but if you read, after the manner of Men, the Passage is an Accufation of others, and the Vindication of himself has a Mixture of Pride in it, which does not fuit the Character of the Speaker.

In the xiith Chapter Job magnifies the Power of God in making and disposing all things: At ver. 16, we have these remarkable Words, With bim is Strength and Wisdom, the Deceived and the Deceiver are his. If nothing more is meant by this, than that the cunning Man, as well as the weak Man, is under the Power of God, 'tis an Observation that needed not to have been prefaced with an express Declaration of God's great Wisdom and Power; nor should it be placed, as it is, among the greatest Works of Providence;

TV

ob

8;

W-

nis

225

30-

is

1-

dee

D.

18

ter

u-

of

ch

he

all

ole

m, If

nat

17,

ef-

ed

eat

ed,

vi-

(5:

dence; the Creation of the World; the destroying it by a Flood; the settling and enlarging the Nations of the Earth, and straitning them again: In the midst of these great Accounts of Providence stands this Observation, the Deceived and the Deceiver are bis. This therefore must be something relating to the general Condition of Mankind, and must be understood to be an Instance of God's Providence in the great Affairs of the World. And for this Reason 'tis very probable that the Words were meant of the Fall of Man through the Cunning of the Temper. It was directly to the Purpole of the Book of Job to affert and maintain the Superiority of God over the Deceiver, who, by this very means of bringing Evil into the World, had grown up, in the Opinion of many, into a Rival of the Power and Majesty of God.

There is another Passage in this Book of Job very like to the former, which considered and compared with it, will leave little room to doubt of its true Meaning. The Passage I mean is in Chap. xxvi. they are the Words of Job: By bis Spirit be (God) bath garnished the Heavens; bis Hand bath formed the crooked Serpent. How come these disagreeable Ideas to be joined together?

P 3

How

How comes the forming of a crooked Serpent to be mentioned as an Inftance of Almighty Power, and to be fet, as it were, upon an equal foot with the Creation of the Heavens, and all the Host of them? Read the whole Chapter; all the Images there of divine Power are great and magnificent: Hell (we are told) is naked before God, and Destruction bath no Govering: He stretcheth out the North over the empty Place, and hangeth the Earth upon nothing. He bindeth up the Waters in his thick Clouds, and the Cloud is not rent under them - He bath compassed the Waters with Bounds until the Day and Night come to an end. The Pillars of Heaven tremble and are assonished at his Reproof. He divideth the Sea with his Power, and by his Understanding he smiteth thro the Proud: By his Spirit the Heavens are garnished; bis Hand formed the crooked Serpent. Can you possibly imagine that the forming the crooked Serpent in this Place means no more than that God created Snakes and Adders? This furely cannot be the Cafe!

If we consider the State of Religion in the World when this Book was penn'd, it will help to clear this Matter up. The oldest Notion, in opposition to the Supremacy of the Creator, is that of two inde-

pendent

pe

m

of

of

fre

If

W

bei

m

pu

ni

7

211

In

Pa

lat

to

W

tw

to

A

cr

24

of

pli

E

nt

ty

an

ns,

ne

We

on

be

be

be

ud

Ted

nd

of

le-

er,

be

17-

nt.

ng

no

10-

in

it

he

-31

k-

nt

pendent Principles, as has been already observed: And the only Kind of Idolatry mentioned in the Book of Job (and it was of all others the antientest) is the Worship of the Sun and Moon, and heavenly Hoft; from this Job vindicates himself, Chap, xxxi, If I beheld the Sun when it shined, or the Moon walking in brightness; and my Heart bath been secretly enticed, or my Mouth bath kissed my Hand; this also were an Iniquity to be punished by the Judge; for I should have denied the God that is above. Suppose now Job to be acquainted with the Fall of Man, and the Part ascribed to the Serpent in the Introduction of Evil, and fee how aptly the Parts do cohere. In opposition to the idolattous Practice of his Time, he afferts God to be the Maker of all the Hoft of Heaven, - By bis Spirit bath be garnished the Heavens: In opposition to the false Notion of two independent Principles, he afferts God to be the Maker of him who was the first Author of Evil; bis Hand bath formed the crooked Serpent. You see how properly the garnishing of the Heavens and the forming of the Serpent are joined together.

That this was the antient traditionary Explication of this Place, we have undeniable Evidence from the Translation of the Seven-

P 4

which relates to the Serpent, in this manner, which relates to the Serpent, in this manner, applicated is spaner on Sucreta accessor. By a Descree be defined the applicate Dragon: The Syriac and Arabic Versions are to the same Sense. These Translators applied the Place to the Punishment inflicted on the Serpent; and it comes to the same thing; for the punishing the Serpent, is as clear an Evidence of God's Power over the Author of Evil, as the creating him.

The old Commentator upon Job, printed among the Works of St. Jerom, tho' he chiefly pursues a mystical Sense, yet has lest us a plain Intimation how he understood these Words — Educitur ab eis (i.e. ab animabus Sanctis) & de cordibus earum excluditur ille, in quo nibil est rectum, CO-LUBER TORTUOSUS.

We need not wonder to see so much Concern in this Book of Job to maintain the Supremacy of God, and to guard it against every salse Notion; for this was the Theme, the Business of the Author. He gives, as it were, an Epitome of his Design in these remarkable Words delivered by Jobs God is wise in Heart and mighty in Strength: Who bath bardened himself against him, and bath prosperad with the sale words.

N.

The

n

n

is

P

t

2

V

·'t

p

C

ti

ti

A

0

d

MA

C

F

i

I

The mention of the Serpent in this manner in the Book of Jab, is the more to be regarded, because this Book being, as I concieve, older that the Mosaic History, it is an evident Proof that the Account of Moses is the antient Account of the Fall, and not a Story dressed up by himself to serve any

particular Ends or Purpofes.

1

But let us proceed to confider what Notions this Writer had of the Confequences of . the Fall, and of the State of the World after it. The general Corruption of the World has been observed in all Times, and 'tis not worth the while to be particular in proving, that this antient Writer had the same Sense which others had of the Condition of Mankind. He mentions the Flood. the overturning the Earth by Waters, as he styles it; but this too is an uncontested Piece of History. One Observation he has which deserves our Regard, That all the Works of Nature are prepared by God to be his Infiruments, either for Judgment or for Mercy: Of the Clouds, he fays, they are made to do what seever be commandeth them upon the Face of the World in the Earth. He caufeth it to come, whether for Correction, or for bis Land, or for bis Mercy, xxxvii. 12, 13. The Treasures of Snow and Hail are reserved against

Ir

m

mit

al

to

th

1

21

is A

b

T

u.ly

V

V

uje '

against the Time of Trouble, against the Day of Battle and War, xxviii. 23. It seems not improbable to me, that these Resections arose from the Methods made of by Providence (not worn out of Memory in this Writer's Time) in punishing the old World, in confequence of the Curse laid upon the Ground. Such Methods they are, by which the Ground may, at any time, be curfed, and the Toil and Labour of Men increased, to what degree God thinks fit. And 'tis to be noted, that the Bleffing promifed to Noah, upon the Restoration of the Earth, is expressed by the regular Successions that should continue, from that time, of Seed-time and Harvest, Cold and Heat, Summer and Winter; which is but a Promise, in other Words, that the Hail and Snow, and the Waters of Heaven, should be no longer Instruments of Judgment, but of Mercy. In the xxxviiith Chapter God is introduced fetting forth bis own great Works of Wisdom and Power; he laid the Foundations of the Earth; be sout up the Sea with Doors; be commanded the Morning and the Day-spring: After which . it follows, From the Wicked their Light is with-holden. This Passage might be thought to allude to the Egyptian Darkness, did it not refer to a much older Date, and fland among

among the earliest of God's Works, as an Infance of his Power from the Beginning. The fame Reflection occurs in this Writer more than once; it is mentioned again Chap, ix. and numbered among the Judgments of God: He commandeth the Sun, and it rifeth not; and fealeth up the Stars. Again, Chap. xxxvi. after mention of the Clouds. and of Light, it follows, By them judgeth be the People. To what antient Piece of Hiftory do all these Allusions refer? We have nothing remaining upon Record to which the Application may be made. This only I find, that when God restored the Earth, and gave his Bleffing to Noab, one Promise is. That Day and Night Shall not cease: A strong Intimation that Clouds and Darkness, Storms and Tempests, had greatly prevailed before, for the Punishment of the old World. These Expressions, you'll say perhaps, were used in the Eastern Countries metaphorically: 'Tis true, I find them fo used in this very Book of Job, Chap. xxii. 11. what was the Foundation of the Metaphor? Metaphors do not arise out of nothing; and there was forme reason why sealing up of Stars, and darkening the Sun, were Expresfions made use of to denote a State of Sorrow and Diffress. Job's Affliction is described

18

t

e

6

is

ıt

it

d

8

by

1

1

ti

a

th

ru

bo

Jo

m

U

rei

thy

Wi

ter

tio

isq

eth

flee

Up

Cal

by one of his Friends in this manner: Sud. den Fear troubleth thee, or Darkness that thou canst not see, and abundance of Waters cover The first Expression is plain, the fecond and third are metaphorical. Why the Judgments of God are represented by the overwhelming of Waters, every Man may understand who knows the History of the Flood. But how will you account for the fecond Metaphor? Or why is he faid to be without the Sun, who fuffers under Trouble or Affliction in this Life? In this manner Job himself complains: The Days of Afflittion prevented me, I went mourning without the Sun, xxx. 28. The fame Figure is applied in like manner by the Prophet Anna - Seek bim - that turneth the Shaddow of Death into the Morning, and maketh the Day dark with Night, Amos v. 8. And again, I will cause the Sun to go down at Noon, and I will darken the Earth in the clear Day, and I will turn your Feafts into Mourning. and all your Songs into Lamentation, viii. 9, So the Prophet Joel; The Day of the Lord cometh a Day of Darkness and of Gloominess - The Sun and the Moon shall be dark, and the Stars shall withdraw their Shining, Joel ii. 1, 2, 10. And the Prophet Haiab, The Stars of Heaven, and the Constellations thereof.

thereof, shall not give their Light; the Sun shall be darkened in his going forth, and the Moon shall not easie her Light to shine. And I will punish the World for their Evils, and the Wicked for their Iniquity, Is. xiii. 10, 11. But this is not a very material Point, and therefore I need not enlarge on it.

0

As to the Origin of the general Corruption and Deprayity of Mankind, this antient Auri thor feems to suppose, that all Men are conrupt by Descent and Inheritance: What is Man that be Should be clean? and be which is born of a Woman that be fould be righteous? Job xv. 14. The fame Question is asked. again, John xv. 4. In both these Places there ... may be fome Realon perhaps to think, that. Uncleanness is charged upon Man compara-" tively only and with respect to the transcentil dent Purity of God; which is a very diffette rent Thing from the Uncleannes derived from the Fall. But there is another Passage which will not admit of this Confirmation In Chapvy. ter xiv. Joh represents the milerable Conditor tion of Man: Man that is been of a Wantan is of few Days, and full of Trauble; be come eth forth like a Flower, and is sut down; have fleeth alfor as a Shadow, and continueth not Upon this Representation he exposulates his as Case with Gods Deft thou open thine Eyes upon Acts

upon such an one, and bringest me into Judgment with thee? Who can bring a clean Thing out of an unclean? These last Words plainly refer to the first, and shew the Ground of the other Expostulations; What is Manthat be should be clean? and be that is born of a Woman that be should be righteous? For in this xivth Chapter the Question is not, whether a Man is pure compared to God, but whether he has Purity enough left in his present State to make him a fit Object of Judgment. This feems to be the Sense of Job's Expostulation; " Why art thou ex-"treme to mark all my Errors? Is it rea-" fonable to expect Purity of a Man born " of a Woman, who is by the very Condi-"tion of his Birth unclean?" I shall be eafily persuaded that Job had not entered into all the Niceties relating to this Point, but I shall not easily believe that he charged God foolishly, by imputing Uncleanness to the Works of his Creation. For tell me upon what ground this Expostulation stands, How (ball Man be clean that is born of a Woman? Why not clean? Did God make Woman or Man unclean at the Beginning? If he did, the Expostulation would have been more apposite, and much stronger, had the true Cause been assigned, and Job had said, 45 How

nor Re

an fen upo

us,
aft

is the

hac from vail

hin

the wh

AE For

Pri Ju

of

W

"canst thou expect Cleanness in Man, whom "thou createdst unclean?" But as the Case now stands, the Expostulation has a plain Reference to the Introduction of Vanity and Corruption by the Sin of the Woman, and is an Evidence that this antient Writer was sensible of the evil Consequences of the Fall upon the whole Race of Man. Moses tells us, Adam begat a Son in his own Likeness, after his Image; and St. Paul, That we have born the image of the Earthy. The Notion is the same as expressed by Job, Can a clean Thing come out of an unclean?

There is still a very material Question behind; namely, what Hope or Expectation had this antient Writer of a Deliverance from the Evil and Corruption, which pre-

vailed over the whole Race of Man.

In answer to this Question, I observe in the first place, that the Argument of this whole Book supposes a Man to be accountable to his Maker for the Good or Evil of his Actions. This Point is not disputed between Job and his Friends; they differ widely sometimes in their Notions of God's Method of Justice towards Men, but it is an allowed Principle on all Sides, that God is Man's Judge as well as his Maker. 2. That the Wicked often prosper in this World, and go down

down in Peace to the Grave, is a Proposition maintained by Job in many Places, but particularly and fully in Chap. xxi. Let us see then whether his Conclusion be agreeable to these Premisses.

In the xivth Chapter Job pleads his Caufa with God, reminding him of the infirm State and Condition of Man: He cometh up as a Flower, and is cut down. - He givet up the Ghoft, and where is be? - He lieth down, and rifeth not till the Heavens be no more. The Question here asked, Where is be? may import, that Job did not suppose Death to be the final Destruction of Man. A like Passage we find, Chap. xvii. I bave faid to Corruption, thou art my Father; to the Worm, thou art my Mother and my Sifter. And where is now my Hope? As for my Hope who Shall fee it? Not the Men of this Generation, for they Shall go down to the Bars of the Pit, when our Rest together is in the Dust. But such Questions do sometimes amount to Negatives. Where is he? No where. What is my Hope? Nothing Their determinate Sense therefore must be collected from the Context. When a Man gives up the Ghor, where is be? The Meaning of which Queftion is explained in the following Words, for Man tieth down, and rifeth not till the Heavens

m

L

ni Iha pro

vei

itle Ser

Ap

Na

the

ferri

tion

by know

shall and

Body

e

٥

e

3

Þ.

0

2

0

如如

ild A

1

3

2

Heavens be no more. Where is he then, or what is he in the intermediate Space? You may reply, perhaps, that this Expression, till the Heavens he no more, may very well fignify, that Man shall never rife more; and to thew the contraty it ought at least to be proved, that Job had a Notion that the Heavens thould one Day be destroyed, and that new Heavens and a new Earth should fucceed. But if this Expression be doubtful in idelf, yet it is reasonable to expound it to the Sense which arrient Tradition best supports. And this we certainly know from Writers both facred and prophane, that it was a very old Opinion, that the present Frame of Nature should be one Day dissolved, and be succeeded by a Renovation of all Things, by new Heavens and a new Barth. therefore Vatablus, a very learned and judicious Commentator, makes no doubt of referging this Passage to Job's Expectation of a Resurrection in the Day of God's Visitation. This Exposition is supported by another famous Passage, made familiar to us by being a Part of our Burial Office, know that my Redeemer liveth, and that be shall stand at the latter Day upon the Earth; and the after my Skin, Worms destroy this Body, yet in my Flesh shall I see God; whom

I shall fee for myself, and mine Eyes shall bebold, and not another, tho' my Reins be confumed within me, xix. 25, &c. Many worthy and learned Men have understood this Place of a temporal Deliverance expected by Job. The late pious and worthy Bishop of Ely, Dr. Patrick, particularly, has followed this Sense in his Paraphrase on the Book of Job. What he fays upon the 26th Verfe will thew his Meaning perfectly, and therefore I heed transcribe no more: His Paraphrase is this; And the the Worms, which have eaten my Skin, Should proceed to confume the reft of this wretched Body, yet I feel my Soul inspired with a comfortable Belief, that before I de I Shall fee myfelf restored, by the Mercy of God, to a happy Estate. 708's Condition indeed was such, that the Description in the Ten (the after my Skin Worms deftroy this Bod) will fuit his Case exactly, and we cannot necessarily collect, from the Expression only, that he thought of the Corruption of the The other Expression (in my Flesh thatt I fee God) may likewife fignify bis fee ing God before he put off his Flesh, V. 2. be fore he died. And there is ffill another Res-Ion, which has often weighed with me on the fide of this Exponiion, which is this; That if we expound this Pallage in Job of

K th

the

the be

the

this fut

by at a

incl

vera

Wou

in teafil

who

lirae ledge

fit to

ting

#-

hy

06. 145

bis

ob,

W

ed is:

bis

4

od,

3)

Hot

ly,

the left

Per-

beez-

on

is;

a future Resurrection, it contains a Degree of Knowledge in this great Mystery, beyond & the Proportion of Light communicated to the Age in which he lived Mafes has no such express Promise or Prophecy, nor is there any Exidence that the Jewish Church for many Ages had such Knowledge. It is the peculiar Character of our Saviour, That he brought Life and Immortality to Light thre the Gofpel; and jet what do we know from the Gospel, more than is contained in this Paffage, if it is indeed a Description of future Resurrection, to be brought to Light by a Redeemer, who shall fland upon the Earth at the latter Day? These Reafons I imagine, inclined the Jewill Interpreters to confine the Sense of this Passage to a temporal Deliverance only For should they admit a future Refurrection to be here intended, how would it confut with the Profesence they give to themselves, above all other Nations, in the Knowledge of Religion? Can they eafily be perfuaded, do you think, that Job who was an Alien from the Commonwealth of lirael, had a clearer and more diffinet Know-ledge of this great Mystery, than God thought fit to reveal to the Jewish Church! Belides, this Description in the Book of Job, admitung that it relates at all to a future Refut

rection, is fo confonant to the Doctrine of the Gospel, and is indeed so strong a Prophecy of the Office and Character of Christ Jefus, that it is no more to be expected of a Jew, that he should see and acknowledge this Sense of the Passage, than that he should subscribe to the Interpretation of other antient Prophecies, in the Sense in which they are applied in the New Testament. It is strange to me to observe what Stress the very learned Grotius lays upon the Confent of the Tewish Interpreters in this Cafe: They are, fays be, inquisitive after every thing that may with any Appearance be applied to the Refurrection, but this Passage of Job they never so ap-And Reason good; the Jews without doubt would be glad to find in their own Law, whatever appears to them to be excellent in the Golpel, that they may thew the little need there was for the Gospel Revelation. But would they be equally glad to find clearer Knowledge of divine Truth among the antient Arabians, than among the Descendants of Abraham? Of to lee 2 plain prophetical Description of the grand Article of the Gospel, even before the gwing of their own Law?

The same learned Person has another Objection against those who interpret this Pa-

fage

Si

0

p

V

I

u

pr W

pr

fro

elí

M

900 Y

fto

in Su

confu

i. e.

Ego quia

14. x

victo

prop

Deus

he

of

at

iat

of

to

he-

ied

me

70-

rish

he.

ith

rec-

ap-

OUI

wn

œl-

the

elato ruth

ong

ee a

and

ving

Ob-

Pa-

fage

fage of a Resurrection. He thinks, with others to whom he refers, that they all depart from the original Hebrew (coasti funt in versionibus suis multum ab Hebrao discedere. It is happy that this learned Hand has given us, what he judges to be, the true Sense of the Passage; for it shews that no just Interpretation or Translation can be given of these Words, which will exclude the Notion of a Refurrection. Grotius his own Sense expressed according to the Original, is so far from shutting out this Notion, that it can hardly be made to agree with any thing else *. For what do those Words mean, Mine Eye shall behold, and not another, (bifce oculis meis: ego, non autem alius pro me.) If Job's Thought was, that he should be restored to his former Health and Prosperity in this Life, why does he guard against the Suspicion that it might be another, and not

Hebræa sic sonant: Scio ego Redemptorem meum vivere, E illum postremo staturum in campo. Etiamsi non pellem tantum meam, sed & boc (nempe arvinam quæ sub pelle est) consumerent (morbi scilicet) in carne tamen mea Deum videbe (i. e. propitium experiar.) Ego, inquam, hisce meis oculis: Ego non autem alius pro me. — Deus Redemptor dicitur, quia pios ex multis malis liberat. Ps. lxxviii: 35. Esa. xli. 14. xliii. 14. xliv. 6. xlvii. 4. Postremum in campo stare est victoris, sic Deum dicit victorem sore adversariorum suorum. Neque vero ei esse impossibile corpus ejus putredine prope exesum restituere in priorem sormam; quod & secit Deus. Grotius in locum.

Bimfelf who mould be reffered Had the ever teen a Transmutation of Perform in this World, or heard of any Man who cealed to be bimjelf, and became another? District that walte the Body, and often do, to a great degree, but we hover are affaid that they Will delitroy the Perjon, or change the Man. What is it then that Jub guards agained if you apply this Paffage to the Refurrection, this Circumstance, that be bimfelf, and not inother for bim, thould fee God, is the most exbreffive of his Hope. Death, to all appearance, deffroys the Person, the whole Man; and the possibly there may be a Renovation of the World, yet still it is difficult to conceive how individual Perions thall be to preferved, thro all the Changes of many Ages, as at the last Day to find themselves to be themfelves again.

But further; the Words in the Original which we render, be shall stand at the latter Day upon the Earth, are in Grotius's Translation thus expressed, illum postremo staturum in campo; by which he means, be shall keep the Field, (quod viotoris est) which is a Mark of Conquest. Allow this, and what do they suffer, who apply this Passage to the Resurrection? The restoring Life to the World's represented as the greatest Victory and Iri-

umpb;

un be

la

T

Gi

A

ufe

mı

que

Ex

the

to i

an

Co

anc

mo

had

que

Fie

nifi

An

via

not

a gr

cult

fuct

umph; St. Paul says, Christ must reign till be bath put all Enemies under his Feet; the last Enemy that shall be destroyed is Death. The Expression therefore, as expounded by Grotius, has nothing inconsistent with an Application of the whole Passage to the Resurrection.

6

*

è

7

H

1,

1-

-

-

'n

-

C-

8,

ni

4

er

D-

42

ey

1-

18

But the original Word Hapbar is never used, that I can find, to fignify a Field; much less a Field of Battle; and I very much question whether keeping the Field was an Expression of Victory, of so old a Date as the Book of Job. It feems to me to belong to the Times when War was become more an Art, than it was in the Times of Job: Conquerors then did not use to keep the Field; and why should they, when one Battle commonly decided the Point, and the Conquered had nothing to do but to fly, and the Conqueror to pursue? And even now, keeping the Field is the lowest Idea of Victory, and fignifies little more than not being routed: And was this a fit Image to represent the all victorious Power of the Almighty? Does it not it not convey to the Mind the Notion of a great Struggle for Victory, of great Difficulties in obtaining the Conquest? And is fuch a Notion agreeable to the Book of Job,

which seems to be written on purpose to shew that God has no Rival in Power?

But let us see what Light may be had by considering the Passage itself, and the Senti-

ments upon which it is formed.

It is apparent that Job founds his Hopes, whatever they were, on the Power of his Redeemer; and therefore we may expect to find in what is faid of him, plain Marks and Characters of Power. I know that my Redeemer liveth. This is a just Reflection. and proper to the Case. And if you confider these Words as spoken by a Man, in his own Opinion, ready to expire under Grief of Mind and Pain of Body, they necessarily imply an Hope extending itself beyond the Grave. His Thought is this; I am dying, but I know my Redeemer shall never die; and therefore I will still trust in him for Deliverance. But where is the Sense or Comfort of this, upon Supposition that nothing can be done to help us after Death? Sith and in

And that he shall stand at the latter Day upon the Earth. (Veahharon hal haphar jakoum) This Circumstance surely is not infignificant; and yet what does barely standing on the Earth import? Is it any Mark of Power or Dignity to stand on the Earth, on which so many Thousand weak and mise-

rable

to

D

fai

uf

ri

to

In

Sp

W

(b

th

28

Ve

T

fe

ar

OI

CI

W

be

C

di

to

rable Things stand every Day? The original Words therefore (supposing Hapbar to mean the Earth) should, I conceive, be rendered to this Sense, and that he shall at the latter Day arise with Power over the Earth. The same Expression, and in the same Sense, is used 2 Chron. xxi. 4. When Jehoram was risen (va-jakom hal) up to the Kingdom, i.e. to rule and govern it as King. Many other Instances might be given of this Manner of Speaking, which will eafily occur to those who enquire after them. See Noldius in voce (bal) pag. 688. In this Sense Job affirms that his Redeemer should stand on the Earth. as a King stands over his Kingdom, to govern it, and to do Justice and Judgment. This Confideration to an innocent Man, suffering undefervedly, was a great Comfort; and a proper Character it is of the Redeemer on whose Power Job's Hope entirely depended.

s,

is

O

KS Ly

115

ef

ly

ne

ıd,

6-1

rt

П

1111

ay

an-

d-

of

n

e-

ole

But commodious as this Sense is, there is this Objection to it, that Haphar rarely, if ever, signifies the Earth in that Sense in which it must be here taken: Haphar may be, and is translated Earth, when Earth is equivalent to Dust. For instance, it is indifferent whether we say, Man shall return to the Earth again, or Man shall return to

the Duft again, from whence he was taken In this therefore, and in like Cases, you will find Hapbar render'd by Iv. Terra, Earth, by Greek, Latin, and Englifb Translators. But when the Earth is spoken of as the habitable World, as the Place which God made for Man, or as the Place subject to God's Power and Dominion, it is not stiled Haphar. And yet if you take Haphar in the proper Sense, as it fignifies Duft, the Image that arises is quite improper to the Turn of Thought in this Place. To fland on the Dust, to be founded on the Dust, are Expreffions fignifying a weak and tottering Condition. To fit on the Duft, and lye in the Duft, are Phrases descriptive of a State of Misery and Diffress. Job therefore, who is contemplating the Power and Might of his Redecmer, could not fay, that at the latter Day he should fland on the Duft; which would, according to the Idiom of his Country, be faying, he should be weak, and like an House built on the Sand, ready to fall. But,

There is another Use of the Word Haphar frequently to be met with, and which will suit all the Circumstances of this Place. We read in Genesis that Man was formed of the Dust (Haphar) of the Ground. And in the

Book

Bo

(ba

agi

and

H

DE

int

ref

is, Bo

pu

an

ah

his

for

OU

wi

w

W

tur

ab

lat

an

ho

ne

in

Ac

hi

8. C

d

0

d

.

1

*

Book of Job we read, xxxiv. 15. All Flesh (ball perift together, and Man Shall turn again unto (HAPHAR) Duft. From thefe, and many other Paffages, it appears that Hapbar is the proper Word to fignify the Duft, out of which Man was made, and into which all dead Bodies are ulsimately resolved. Consider now what Job's Hope is, Tho after my Skin Worms defiroy this Body, yet in my Flesh Shatt I fee God: He puts the Gafe of his being utterly deftroyed, and his Body reduced to Duft and Afhes. and yet his Confidence is that he thould in his Fielh fee God: And if you take the Reafon he gives for his Plope, as it will come out upon this Sense of the Word, and you will find a Propriety and Justness in the whole Pallage. As for myfelf, fays he, I am wasting away, and this Body shall foon return to Dust again; but my Redeemer will abide for ever, and I know that he will at the latter Day arife with Power over (this) Duft, and in my Fleth I thall fee God. You fee how the Parts agree. Job, the fenable that he should foon return to Duft, yet trusted in God knowing that the could as casily reftore him from Dust, as he at first made him and all Men out of the Dust of the Ground.

There

236 DISSERTATION ALC

There is a Circumstance belonging to this Passage, and which ought to be considered with it, to which Grotius has faid nothing, and which can hardly be reconciled with the Opinion, that Job expected no more than a temporal Deliverance. The Cafe is this: Job being tired with the Opposition of his Friends, and the perverse Construction they made of his Misfortunes, as if he must needs be as wicked as he was miferable, appeals from them to another Judgment. Oh, fays he, that my Words were now written! Ob that they were printed in a Book! That they were graven with an iron Pen and Lead, in the Rock for ever ! For I know that my Redeemer liveth, and that he shall fland at the latter Day upon the Earth. You see how strongly Job infifts upon his Plea; tho' Men would not receive it, yet he wishes it were graven in the Rock for ever; that it might remain till the Time, in which God would come to judge his Cause; For I know, says he, that my Redeemer liveth. Suppose Job to expect a future Time of Judgment, the whole Paffage is exceeding beautiful and proper. "I find, says he, that my Com-" plaint is difregarded here; that Man has " no Compassion for me; and that God in " his unsearchable Wisdom suffers the Innoec cent ofortin

d

.

8

7

8

st cent, as well as the Guilty, to be unfortu-Sonate in this Life! But the Time will come " when my Plea shall be heard; and to fa-"tisty'd am I in the Righteousness of it, that " I would have it semain as my Monument " for ever, graven in the Rock; for though I "myfelf thall foon be gone, jet my Re-Mideeiner lives, and will at the last Day call I men from the Grave; and with my own "Eyes thall I fee God my Saviour:" But if you suppose Job to expect only a temporal Restitution, within the Compassiof his own Life to what End or Purpose does he so passionatly wish to have his Complaints rendered Immortal? What Sense is there in faying "Ob that my Complaint which "you despise may never be forgeten, for I " know that within a little Time I hall " be restored by God to all my Glory, and " former Felicity, and hall have no Caufe " to complain any more." In one View, the Images are lively, passionate, and the Sentiments juft and proper atini the other there is neither Force nor Vigour, more Propriety anordindeed, hardly any Senferial variAs to the Degree of Hight and Knowledge emed their bir Passage, and which seems disproportionate to the Age of Job, there is this to be faid! There might possibly be a-AA among

mong the few Faithful in the World, a traditionary Experition of the Pronties of God, grounded open more express Revelations, made either before or foon after the Flood, than have come down to our Times y or as Job was tryed in a very extraordinary Manner, he might have as extraordinary a Degree of Light to support and maintain him in the Conflict. There is nothing in either of these Suppositions, but what is conformable to the Methods of divine Providence; nothing that intrenches upon wour shleffed Lord's Office, who was appointed to bring Life and Immertality to Light through the Gofpel. Tis by Chrift, and by him lalone, that we have God's Covenant of Immortality conveyed to us, but yet the antient Prophets had a Sight of the Bleffing at a Diftance, as is evident from many of their Predictions +. And why might not 30b he to honoured, as well as others who lived before the Days of the Integer ate lively, patient thousand and

But still there is something that seems to unaccountable in this Matter a for if Job's Friends allowed and believed this great Tsuth of a suture Resurrection, how is it, that they continue to press their Argument, and to in-

p

in

at

B

in

O

fu

0

fa

[†] See Dr. Clark's Discourse concerning the Connexion of the Prophet & &c. Page 12, 13.

fift that he was undoubtedly wicked, because miferable? How is it, that they do not reply to this Argument, and thew the Restoning to be falle, if they apprehended it to be fo? Or, if this Knowledge was peculiar to Job, how is it, that they are not surprized at fuch new, Juck Strange Distrine? And yet no fuch Markschave been observed pas far as I have feen by any loscopreters. The Book of Job is in the Nature of a Drome, in which feveral Persons appear discoursing one with shallery and how could fuch a material Affection as this pass unobserved by all the Speakers? One would imagine, from fuch Conductor that Job's Friends understood him to speak only of his Hope in this Life, which they might entertain as a vain Delufion, and deferving no Regard, with section

otherwile upon soffice Cule will appear otherwile upon soffice Emaintation; and that the Circumstances relating to this Paffage, aduly observed, will call a great Light upon it, and he as Means to open to us the true and genuine Meaning of it, and and to

The Argument between Job and his Friends turns upon this Point, whether the Afflictions of this World are vertain Marks of God's Displicature, and an Indication of the Wickedness of those who suffer? Job's

Friend

Friends maintain the Affirmative; and in consequence of it, charge with with great Iniquity, for no other Reason, but because they faw him greatly miferable! This they thought was doing Honour to the Juffice of God; but Job calls it fpeaking wickedly for God, and talking descritfully for bim; and accepting the Person of God, Chap. xiii. as cor. rupt Judges accept the Perfons of great Men. when they give Sentence partially in their Favour. As to himfelf, herefoldtely mainstained his Innocence; but fitt he depended upon the Justice and Goodness of God notwithflanding his present Diftres His Character cannot be better described than in his own Words, The be flay me, yet will truft in bim . But I will maintain mine own Ways before bim, Chap! xiii. ver ago ble isaplain from hence that Joh's Friends confined the Exercise of God's Justice within the Scene of this World; and looked no further; but He, vexed with continual Repusables apt eplies himfelf to God in certain Expectation of another Time for Julineju Ob that the wouldest bide me in the Grave, that Thou wouldest keep me ferret untilthy Wrath be full, that they wouldest appoint me a fet Time and remember me ! Chap. xiv. 13. What Time was it, do you imagine, that Job defired to be 50601

be th

noi Jha ba

Gr

The Hea

an the

Pla waj

Hop gain

Thu

The nite

he h

were had

be appointed for him? Was it the Time of this Life? If so, how could it succeed his being bid in the Grave? No, he had other Hopes, and expected to be called from the Grave, and feems affured that God would not desert his Creatures even there; Thou shalt call, and I will answer thee: Thou wilt have a Defire to the Work of thine Hands, ver. 15. He had before declared his Notion. That Man lieth down, and rifeth not till the Heavens be no more, ver. 12. And presently he declares, that all Things were drawing to an End, the Earth; and the Inhabitants thereof. Surely the Mountain falling cometh. to nought, and the Rock is removed out of bis Place. The Waters wear the Stones: Thou washest away the Things which grow out of the Dust of the Earth, and thou destroyest the Hope of Man. Thou prevailest for ever at gainst bim, and be possetb, ver. 18, 19, 20. Thus far Job. Let us fee now how this new Argument is entertained by his Friends: The first who replies is Eliphaz the Temanite; he appears quite aftonished, and asks Job where he had this Knowledge, whether he had the Secret of God; and had engroffed all Wildom to bimfelf; he tells him, they were no Strangers to the Ways of Golf, but had heard as much from their Fathers as R 706

Fob had, tho' he pretended to the Knowledge of fuch fecret Things. But take his own Words; Art thou the first Man that was born? Or wast thou made before the Hills? Hast thou beard the Secret of God? And dost thou restrain Wisdom to thyself? What knowest thou that we know not? What understandest thou which is not in us? With us are both the grey-headed and very aged Men, much elder than thy Father. Are the Confolations of God (which we have instructed thee in) fmall with thee? Is there any secret Thing with thee? Chap. xv. ver. 7, 8, 9, 10, 11. After this strong Expostulation, he returns to his old Argument, and offers many Proofs, from antient Tradition, of God's immediate Vengeance upon the Wicked. The next who answered Job is Bildad the Shubite: He talks in the same Strain, and reproaches Job with his Pretence to fecret Knowledge above others. - Wherefore, fays he, are we counted as Beafts, and reputed vile in your Sight? Chap. xviii. ver. 3. And because Job had talked as if the Heavens should cease to be, and that the Earth and its Inhabitants should fail, and the Rock be removed out of his Place, Bildad thinks him even distracted with Pasfion, and reproaches him with his wild Conceit; He teareth bimself in his Anger: Shall especial result enough course brand the

the Roc

" 1

" t

4 7

" n " o) " S

Job

Hop Enq

rebu

l bas

why ackn

Mises that

God, Judg

ind.

u die,

is

ı

?

A

)_

A

be

er

od

tb

?

is

ld

n-

2-

n-

ks

th

0-

ted

t?

ad

be.

ıld

ce.

of-

mà

all.

the

the Earth be for saken for thee? and shall the Rock be removed out of his Place? Chap. will. ver. 4. As if he had said, What is this wonderful Man, that he expects to see all Things destroyed, the Earth and the Heavens to pass away, that there may be a proper Time to do him Justice? Is it not more reasonable to think that God will do Justice here, than that all the Works of Nature should be destroyed to make way for Judgment? Yea, the Light of the Wicked shall be put out, and the Spark of his Fire shall not shine, ver. 5.

These repeated Provocations drew from Job that noble Declaration of his Faith and Hope, which is the Subject of our present Enquiry. In the next Chapter he gently rebukes his Friends for their severe Reproaches for his supposed Error, and be it indeed that I have erred, mine Error remaineth with my-felf, Chap. xix. ver. 4. It affects not you, why then are ye so enraged? He goes on to acknowledge, in the first place, that all his Misery was from the Hand of God; and that he cried in vain, being not regarded by God, or by Man; I cry aloud, but there is no Judgment, ver. 7. But then, so far was he

R 2 from
Ti yapsar ou unosavus, asiuns w un' upavor; What, if
m dit, must the Earth under the Heaveus be uninhabitable?

from being ashamed of the Error imputed to him, that he appeals again with great Solemnity to the future Judgment of God-Ob that my Words were now written! Ob that they were printed in a Book! that they were graven with an Iron Pen and Lead, in the Rock for ever! For I know that my Redeemer liveth, and that be foull fand at the latter Day upon the Earth: And the after my Skin Worms deftroy this Body, yet in my Field Soull I fee God; whom I shall fee for myself, and mine Eyes swall behold, and not another. Job's Meaning in this folemn Appeal may be understood from another like Passage; Also now, behold, my Witness is in Heaven, and my Record is on bigh. My Friends Scorn me: But mine Eye poureth out Tears unto God, Chap. xvi. ver. 19, 20. From these Reasons and Circumstances laid together, it appears to me evident, that Tobs Friends understood him to freak of a Refurrection to Judgment, and not of a temporal Deliverance; otherwise what Occasion was there to reproach him with pretending to be wifer than all Men, to know the Secret of God, beyond what the first Man knew, or any who fucceeded him? What Reafon was there to charge him with an Opinion, that the Earth should be for faken for his fake? His temporal

the third of the Spe

ver

hu

Lift dift

Fee

not

plic we por

live is a

Inte

able con Am

yai •

the

flexio

d

6

ry

172

e-

be

er

27

or

of

0-

ke

in

17

ut

m

C-

Ps

n-

723

be

of

or

723

hat

Tis

temporal Deliverance furely could hurt neisther the Earth nor its Inhabitants ... Add to this, two other Charges brought against Job's Opinion by Eliphaz, and not yet taken No. tice of; he calls his Notion unprefitable. Speeches that can do no Good, nay, which are hurtful; for, fays he, thou cafteft off Fear, and reftrainest Prayer before God, Chap. xv. His Thought was plainly this; if once Job can perfuade Men that God does not interpole to execute Judgment in this Life, but referves all Things to a distant, for distant Day of Visitation, when the Heavens shall be no more, there will be an End of all. Fear of God, an End of all Prayer and Supplication to him. * Taking it in this Light we fee how the Charge arifes; but could he possibly charge Job's Hope of temperal Doliverance with such Consequences? If not, it is a great Evidence in what manner he underfood Job; and, I think, we need no other

This very Passage is to me no inconsiderable Argument of the Reality of the History contained in the Book of Jobs and of the Amiquity of the Book itself: For supposing the Book to be senote peetical Fistion, upon

This Senfe of the Passage is confirmed by a like Reflexion in the Book of Job, Chap. xxi. from ver. 7. to ver.

what Ground of Probability does the Author furnish Job with fuch exalted Sentiments of Religion, and at the same time suppose them to be such Secrets to all his Friends? Is there any fuch Instance in any Author? Cicero in his Dialogues introduces Philosophers of different Opinions, but we find them all acquainted equally with the common Notions of their own Times; and it would be abfurd in any Author to suppose the contrary, without very evident Reason; and there can be no fuch Reason but the Evidence of History. Confequently the Book of Job must be founded in History, and not in Invention. In the Time of Job, true Religion was preferved among a few, and communicated by special Revelation; whether therefore Job had himself this Knowledge by Prophecy, or received it by Tradition in his own House from those who had, he might very well know what his Friends and Neighbours knew not. This Circumstance is natural and agreeable to the Times, suppoling the History to be true; but it is unnatural, and without Probability, which is the very Life of poetical Fiction, Supposing the Book to be a mere Fable or Parable.

I have been much longer in examining these Passages in the Book of Job, than I intended

in

W

of do

fo

all

M

R

Be

M

ch

di

try to

th

tic

is

ha

te

m W

th

R

Pr

L

10

is

Ŋ

CS

re

16

it

fe

9

10

k

ot

2-

1-

CT

32

n

10

d

œ

16

is

ıg

ng

1;

intended: but this Book is so obscure and hard to be understood, that I found it would be to little Purpose to produce the Passages, without endeavouring to fix the Meaning of them. And if I have not mistaken in so doing, the Time has not been ill employed; for the Evidence arifing from this Book is in all Respects considerable; and it is of great Moment to fee those great Strokes of true Religion, and of God's Purpose from the Beginning with respect to the Children of Men, preserved in an Author who cannot be charged with Jewish Education or Prejudices; but who was born in another Country, of another Family, and does not appear to have heard of Moses, or his Law, and yet the Secret of God was with him.

I will be very short in what follows.

We may consider the Books of Pfalms, the Proverbs, and Ecclesiastes, as the Productions of one and the same Age; and there is no Reason to think, but that the Writers had the same Opinions in the Subject-Matters of our Enquiry. If we find less than it may seem reasonable to expect from these Writers, upon the Subject of the Fall, and the Promise made to Adam, there is a plain Reason to be given why it is so; for the great Promises made to David of a Son, whose

Kingdom should endure for ever, bad colipsed all the antient Hopes, and so entirely pol-sessed the Mind of the Plaimili, and of his Son Solomon, that they seldom look higher than the immediate Promises of God to themselves. But yet God's Method of open-ing gradually his Purposes to different Ages was understood by Salomon, who tells us, That the Path of the Just is as the Shining Light, that Shineth more and more unto the perfect Day, Prov. iv. 18. The Case was much the same with the succeeding Prophets; they were Ministers of new Declarations made by God, and had no Occasion to treat of the old. And of the later Writers, none treat exprelly of this Subject; if ever they mention it, it is only occasionally, and in transitu. All the Help therefore to be had in this Case, must come from Hints and Allusions and Ways of speaking, which refer. to antient Things, and shew the Writer's Sense concerning them. Thus when Solomon tells us, He applied his Heart, to know - the Reason of Things, and to know the Wickedness of Folly, even of Foolishness and Madness; and then declares the Refult of all his Enquiry. Lo, this only have I found, that God hath made Man upright, but they have fought out many Inventions, Ecclef. vii. 25, 29. When he

2 H X Still P

N

bFh

1 to the Ling V

DISSERTATION H. '849

he tells us that there is not a just Man upon the Earth that dath good, and sinneth not, ver 20. Not one who can fay, I have made my Heart clean, Law pure from my Sin, Prov. xx. 9. When David tells us that he was shapen in Iniquity, that in Sin did his Mather conceive him, Pfalm li. 5. and that in the Sight of God no Man Spall be justified, Pfal. cxlin. 2. When we read in the Book of Wisdom, that God made not Death, neither both he Pleasure in the Destruction of the Living. For he created all things, that they might have their Being; and the Generations of the World were healthful: And there is no Poison of Destruction in them; nor the Kingdom of Death upon the Earth. For Righteoufness is immortal. But ungodly Men quith ebeio Works and Words called it to them Wild. is 13, 14, 15, 16. And again, That God created Man to be importal, and made bim to be an Image of his own Eternity. Nevertheless, through Envy of the Devil came Death into the World; and they that do bold of his Side do find it, Wisd. ii. 23, 24. When the Son of Sirach tells us, That Er ror and Darkness had their Beginning together with Sinners, Ecclus, xi. 16. That Death is the Sentence of the Lord over all Flesh, Ecclus. xli. 3. That the Covenant from the Beginning

Beginning was, Thou shalt die the Death, Ecclus. xiv. 17. That of Woman came the Beginning of Sin, and through her we all die, Ecclus. xxv. 24. That God, at the first, filled Man with the Knowledge of Understanding, and shewed him Good and Evil, Ecclus xvii. 7. And left him in the Hand of his (own) Counsel, Ecclus. xv. 14. When, I say, we read and compare all these Passages together, can there be any reasonable Foundation to doubt in what Sense the ancient Jewish Church understood the History of the Fall, or what Consequences they ascribed to it?

When we find the Wicked, and the Enemies of God, represented under the Image of a Serpent, Isa. xiv. 29. xxvii. 1. Micah vii. 17. of Leviathan the crooked Serpent; of a Dragon, Isa. xxvii. 1. When we hear the Wretchedness of the Idolator described by the Prophet in the following Terms, He feedeth of Ashes: A deceived Heart bath turned him aside that he cannot deliver his Soul, Isa. xliv. 20. And when we hear David singing the Triumphs of his Son, to whom the everlasting Kingdom was promised, in such Strains as these, His Name shall be continued as long as the Sun: And Men shall be blessed

b

in him; all Nations shall tall him blessed, Psalm lxxii. 17. His Enemies shall lick the Duft, ver. 9. He shall tread upon the Lion and Adder: The young Lion and the Dragon shall be trample under Feet, Pial. xci. 13. He shall bruise his Enemies with a Rod of Iron, Pfal. ii. 9. When we hear likewife the Prophet describing the Kingdom, which he foretold, in like Figures, and representing the State of the Wicked under that Kingdom, in these very Words, and Dust foat be the Serpent's Meat, Ifa. lxv. 25. Can we give any tolerable Account of thefe Things, but by supposing David to understand, that the Son promised to him, in whose Time Righteoufness and Truth were to be effablished, was the very Seed of the Woman, who should bruise the Serpent's Hend? Could the Prophets understand thier Predictions to belong to any other, when the Triumph of his Reign was to be a Victory over the Serpent, whose Food should then be Dust? Of the same Person David and the Prophets foretel, that he thould rule over all Nations, that Men should be blessed in bim, that all Nations should call him bleffed; which is the distinguishing Character of the bleffed Seed promised to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. From all which 'tis evident, that the Seed

in the bis a out Il

ı-

z

252 DISSERTATION IL

of the Woman, who should bouise the Serpent's Head; the Seed promised to Abrabam, in whom all the Nations of the Earth should be bleffed; the Son promised to David, to fit on his Throne for ever; and the King, who should rule out of Sion, foretold by the Prophets, is ONE and the SAME Person: That the Purpose of God, in give ing the Word of Prophecy, was the fame in every Age: That Christ has, under different Degrees of Light, been fet fouth from the Beginning, as the Hope of the Worlds That He it was, whose Day the Faithful in every Age defired to fee He it was, nobe preserved the first formed Hather of the World that was created alone, and brought him out of his Fell, Wisdom x. 1. He it is, who shall reign till all Enemies ore put under bis Feet, till Death and Hell are cast into the Lake of Fire, Rev. xx. 14tho you or ground

his Reign was to be a Visory over the serpent, whole Road from them by Diff Of
the fame Perfor David and the Prophers
foreted, that he first and syst all Marions,
that Men flow
Waters foods
Waters foods
The Character of the Mel food
promy of the Mel food

DISSER-

DISSERTATION IL

The Bleffing of JUDAH, Gen. xlix.

KENKENKEN KENKENKENKEN

he called his Sons together, and and bleffed them, every one according to his Bleffing, benedic-

tionibus fuis propriis +; i. i. giving to each a peculiar Bleffing. The Part relating to Judan stands thus:

Ver. 8. Judah, thou art he whom thy Brethren shall peniss, the Hand shall be in the Neck of thine Enemies: Thy Pather's Children shall how down before thee.

Vet. 9. Judah is a Lion's Whelp; from the Prey, my Son, thou art gone up: He stooped down, he couched as a Lion, and as an old Lion; who shall rouse him up?

Gen, which 24 1 Volge

Ver. 10.

Ver. 10. The Sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a Lawgiver from between his Feet, until Shiloh come, and unto him shall the gathering of the People be.

Vet. 11. Binding bis Foal unto the Vine, and his Asses Colt unto the choice Vine; he washed his Garments in Wine, and his Clothes in the Blood of Grapes.

There is no Prophecy in the Old Testament, that has undergone so many Interpretations, and critical Disquisitions, as this now before us. It would make a Volume to report exactly the various Sentiments of learned Men upon this Subject. They who desire to be acquainted with them, may consult Huetius*, Mr. Le Clerc +, and Mr. Saurin.

It may be thought perhaps great Presumption to attempt any thing upon this Passage, after so much Pains bestowed on it by Men of great Figure in Learning, but as I have no Intention to make Shew of much Learning, or much Reading, but only to offer a plain natural Sense of the most important Passage in this Prophecy, which seems to me to arise

T

G

bl

H

ar

fo

A

tic

th

B

xl

us.

fer

the

1/4

ba

the xli

Demonstratio Evangelica, Cap. 4. Prop. 9.

[†] Comment. in locum.

¹ Discourf. Historiques, &c. Difc, 41.

DISSERTATION IIL 255.

from the very State and Circumstances of Things, at the Time this Prophecy was delivered, I hope it will not be thought the

Effect of Vanity or Ostentation.

There is a Passage in the Book Ecclehasticus which will ferve as a Key to open to us the Nature of the Bleffings bestowed on the Twelve Tribes by their Father Facob. This Author, the Son of Sirach *, observes, That God gave his Covenant to Abraham, establish'd it with Isac, and made it rest upon the Head of Jacob. Thus far the intire Bleffing, and all the Parts of it, vested in fingle Perfons only: But in the next Step there is an Alteration; for God divided Jacob's Portions +, among the Twelve Tribes did be part them. There is no question but that this Paffage relates to the Settlement and the Blessing of the Tribes by Jacob, in the xlyilith and xlixth of Genefis; and it shews us, that the several Bleffings given to the feveral Tribes are but Parts or Portions of the Bleffings which Jacob received from Isaac; Isaac from Abraham; and Abrabam immediately from God. In this View then the several Bleffings, mentioned in the xlixth of Genefis, and limited to the feveral

2007

^{*} Reclus. xliv. 19, &c. + Ver. 23.

Tribes, must be considered as an Exposition of the original Blessing given to Abrabam; and the Blessing from which the others are derived, must limit and determine the Sense of the Particulars; which cannot be extended beyond the Bounds of the first Promise.

Setting aside the Authority of the Son of Sirach, 'tis reasonable to think that this was the Cafe, from the Custom and Practice in Abrabam's Family, in which the Bleffing of the Father was regularly conveyed to the And when we see Jacob bleffing all his Children, what can we suppose else, but that he is transmitting to his Posterity the Bleffing which he himself received. If we look to the beginning of the xlviith of Genefis, where Jacob adopts Ephraim and Manaffeb, the two Sons of Joseph, and conditutes them Heads of Tribes in his Family, and confequently entitles them to a Share, among his own Sons, of the Land of Canaan, there will be no room to doubt of this Matter. For Jacob founds his Right of allotting the Land of Canaan, in the manner he does, upon God's Grant of that Land to himself. Jacob faid unto Joseph, God Almighty appeared unto me at Luz in the Land of Canaan, and bleffed me, and faid unto

ma fue

See

An

Eg

min

ly,

ma Car

to Ter

his

Pro:

of i

Proi Beg

in fo

Pror

The

2

unto me, Bebold, I will make thee fruitful, and multiply thee, and I will make of thee a Multitude of People, and will give this Land to thy Seed after thee for an everlasting Possession. And now thy two Sons, Ephraim and Manasseh, which were born unto thee in the Land of Egypt before I came unto thee into Egypt, are mine: As Reuben and Simeon, they shall be mine, ver. 3, 4, 5.

facob prefaces his Grant to foseph's Family, with a Recital only of God's Promise to make him fruitful, and to give the Land of Canaan to him and his Seed; for his Gift to foseph's Family went not beyond the Terms of this Grant.

But the Bleffing of Abraham, derived to his chosen Seed, consisted of two Parts; the Promise of the Land of Canaan, and the Promise of that Son, in whom all the Nations of the Earth were to be blessed. These two Promises went inseparably together from the Beginning, and we shall find they continued in some degree to do so to the End.

Let us fee now in what Terms these two

The Land of Canaan The bleffed Seed to

The Lord appeared Thou shalt be a Blef-.

unto Abraham, and faid, Unto thy Seed will I give this Land, Gen. xii. 7.

Lift up now thine Eyes, and look from the Place where thou art Northward, and Southward, and Eastward, and Westward, for all the Land which thou feest, to thee will I give it, and to thy Seed for ever; and I will make thy Seed as the Dust of the Earth, Gen. xiii. 14, &c.

To Isaac.

Unto thee and unto thy Seed I will give all these Countries,— and I will make thy Seed to multiply as the Stars of Heaven, Gen, xxvi. 3, 4.

AND LES PIN

fing, and I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: And in thee shall all Families of the Earth be blessed, Gen. xii. 2, 3.

D

the

an.

Wi

H

bave

Gen

thou

I gi

Seed.

Shall

the E

halt:

the V

East, and to axviii

Abrahamsball surely become a great and mighty Nation; and all the Nations of the Earth shall be blessed in him, Gen.xviii.18.

To Isaac.

and it

And in thy Seedshall all the Nations of the Earth be bleffed, Gen. xxvi. 4.

the Land of Canaly

To

To Facob.

to select sait of

To Facob.

is sdir T of

God give thee of the Dew of Heaven, and the Fatne soft be Earth. and Plenty of Corn and Wine, Gen. xxvii. 28.

botto decrea garage some

Outil Shilled come

and unto bim Ibail!

gathering with Peor

by Generalization

Cen sliv

The Elder Shall ferve the Younger, Gen. xxv. 23. Let the People Jerve thee, and Nations bow down to thee : Be Lord over thy Brethren, and let thy Mother's Son bow down to thee : Curfed be every one that curfeth thee, and bleffed be be that bleffetb thee, Gen.xxvii. 29.

With Corn and Wine bave I sustained bim, Gen. xxvii. 37.

Behold I have made bim thy Lord, and all bis Brethren bave I given to bim for Servants, Gen. xxvii. 37.

The Land whereon thou lieft, to thee will I give it, and to thy Seed. And thy Seed shall be as the Dust of the Earth; and thou Shalt spread abroad to the West, and to the and round order to the A East, and to the North, and to the South, Gen. xxviii. 13. 14.

In thee and in thy Seed Shall all the Nations of the Earth te bleffed, Gen. xxviii. 14.

which make any man

Studement, of this Par

in the antient 'Y avid or among the

To

bell

the

en.

1019

od I

d

be

To the Tribe of Judah.

Judah is a Lion's Whelp; from the Prey, my Son, thou art gone up: He flooped down, he couched as a Lion, and as an old Lion; who shall rouse him up? The Sceptre Shall not depart from Judah, nor a Lawgiver from between his Feet, until Shiloh come, and unto bim shall the gathering of the People be. Binding his Fole unto the Vine, &c. Gen. xhx.q,

10, 11.

To the Tribe of Judab.

Judah, thou art be whom thy Brethren shall praise; thy Hand shall be in the Neck of thine Enemies: Thy Pather's Children shall bow down before thee, Gen. xlix. 8.

Until Shiloh come, and unto him shall the gathering of the People be, Gen. xlix. 10.

Willen or rod Williams

THE - LANGE MOON

are with

If the Words which I have here placed as the Conveyance of the Promise of the blessed to the Tribe of Judah, be not admitted in that Sense, there are no others, relating to this, or any of the other Tribes, which make any mention, much less any Settlement of this Part of Jacob's Blessing. And yet there never was any Doubt, either in the antient Jewish Church before Ghris, or among the Jews since the Time of Chris,

大下の 本語

not

one

b

n

di

fh

w

co

hi

TI

is (

Th

faic

and

Bu

fore

the

Jac Jud

fpec pror be c whe

Sons

little

but that the Promise of the Messab was limited to the Tribe of Judab in this Bleffing; nor is it reasonable to imagine, that Jacob in dividing his Bleffing among his Posterity, should forget the chief and principal Part, which had been with so much Solemnity conveyed from Abrabam, through Isaac, to himself. Besides, the Expression here used, Thou art be whom thy Brethren shall praise, is equivalent to what was faid to Abrabam Thou shalt be a Bleffing; and to what was faid to Jacob, Bleffed be be that bleffeth thee, and must consequently mean the same thing. But of this Part I have already treated in the foregoing Discourses, and will not burden the Reader and myself with Repetitions.

be

ıd

of

by

:11

10,

le.

be

60

ed

he

ot

rs,

es,

Dy

g

et

jŧ,

jħ,

ut

The Promise of the blessed Seed could not be divided, for a Man can descend but from one Tribe; a Son can be born but of one Father; and therefore this Part of Jacob's Blessing went entire to the Tribe of Judab. All the other Tribes have their special Blessing assigned them out of the promised Land; and Interpreters need not be concerned, as some of them are, to find wherein the peculiar Blessing of some of the Sons of Jacob, to whom, or of whom, very little is said, does consist; for the making them Heads of Tribes conveyed to them a

S 3 Right

Right to a Share in the Land of Canaan, and in that their Bleffing confisted, and by that they receiv'd a Portion of the Bleffing of their Father.

3

·E

N

16

n

b

H

F

t

F

0

9

T

tl

The Promise to Abraham, of multiplying bis Seed, and giving them the Lond of Canaan for a Possession, implied necessarily a Promise of temporal Power and Dominion. For a People cannot possess a Land without fome Form, or Rule of Government among them. All the Promifes therefore of a numerous Issue, of Strength and Courage in fubduing Enemies, and the like, are incident to the Promise of the Land of Canaan, and must be referred to it. Thus when we hear the Character of Judah; Judah is a Lion's Whelp; from the Prey, my Son, thou art gone up: He stooped down and couched as a Lion, and as an old Lion; who shall rouse bim? To what else can we apply these Images of Courage and Bravery, but to the martial Disposition of the Tribe of Judah, and to their Victories obtained over the antient Possessors of the Land of Canaan? In like manner all the Promises of Plenty are Part of the Promise which God gave to Abraham and his Posterity, of a Land flowing with Mith and Honey. Of Judab'tis faid - Binding bis Fole unto the Vine, and bis

bis Asses Colt unto the choice Vine: He washed his Garments in Wine, and his Clothes in the Blood of Grapes, His Eyes shall be redwith Wine, and his Teeth white with Milk. This is a Portion of Jacob's Blessing; and can it naturally be deduced from any Part of the Blessing bestowed on him by his Father, but this only? God give thee of the Dew of Heaven, and the Fatness of the Earth, and Plenty of Corn and Wine.

by

ng

ng a-

2

n.

ut

ng u-

in

nt

nd

21

n's

rt

0

use

he

rb.

n-

In

re

to

w-

tis

nd

bis

fining!

There remains still to be accounted for, the Passage relating to the Sceptre of Judab: The Words are these;

fore and have, to which faceb, and beach

The Sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a Lawgiver from between his Feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him shall the gathering of the People be.

The Promise to Abraham was, that he should be the Father of many Nations; and of Sarah it is said, + She shall be a Mother of Nations, Kings of People shall be of her ‡. To Jacob it is said, God multiply thee, that thou mayest be a Multitude of People . The Succession in the House of Abraham was

^{*}Gen. xxvii. 28. †Gen. xvii. 5. ‡Gen. xvii. 16. ||Gen. xxviii. 3.

fi fi

P

t

1

I

preserved in single Persons ull Joseb's Time; he is the first who had a numerous Issue and all of them entitled to the Promiles made to their Forefathers. The Sons of Jacob lived with him, as Children of his Family only, till his going into Egypt ; der when the Account is given of their Romos val to Egypt, they are reckoned not as Heads of Tribes, but as to many Persons only, belonging to the Family of Jacob: All the Souls that came with Jacob into Egypt, which came out of his Loins, besides Jacob's Sons Wives, all the Souls were threescore and fix *, to which Jacob, and Joseph, and his two Sons, born in Egypt, being added, 'tis faid, All the Souls of the House of Jacob, which came into Egypt, were threefcore and ten +. Hitherto there is no mention of any Tribe, or of any House, but the House of Jacob. This State of Things continued during the Seventeen Years of Jacob's Life in Egypt, in all which Time there is no Appearance of any Power or Authority in any Rulers, or Elders, or Heads of Tribes, but in Jacob only. And how should there, before any Tribes were appointed, or any Form of Government was fettled?

Gen, xlvi. 26.

DISSERTATION HILL 265

fettled? When Facob drew near his End, he furnmoned all his Family, in order to appoint the Form of Government which should take place after his Death, and continue as long as his Posterity held Possession of the Land of Canaan. The xlixth Chapter of Genefis is commonly called, Jacob's Bleffing of his Sons; but it might as well be called. facab's Appointment of twelve Rulers or Princes to govern the House of Ifrael. For tell me, bow came this Form of Government, by a Distribution of the People into twelve Tribes, with Heads and Rulers over them, to be pitched upon rather than any other? There is no Defignation of this Form of Government in any other Place of Scripture; and it could not be fettled tacitly, by a mere Devolution of Facob's Power among his Sonsafter his Decease; for had that been the Case, Ephraim and Manaffeb could not have been Heads of Tribes, for their Father Toleph was living, and he must have been Head of one Tribe, as the rest of his Brethren were. Nor is it to be imagined, that so considerable a Part of the Story, as the founding and fettling the Government of Ifrael, should be passed over by Moses in Silence; and his Reader left to supply by Imagination fo material a Part of the History. I Gen. zivut t. + Contactelli de d Generali

i

.

C

35

1

ie

10

ds

W

4

28

17

It must therefore be allowed, that the Government of Ifrael is fettled by Jacob in the xlviiith and xlixth of Genesis.

All the Circumstances reported in these two Chapters answer to this Idea. In the first place Jacob gives the Birthright, as to the temporal Inheritance, to Joseph, by giving him a double Portion, and raising out of his Family two Princes, or Heads of Tribes. in Ifrael: Ephraim and Manasseh are mine: As Reuben and Simeon they shall be mine . And because other Issue from Joseph would have stood upon a Level in Point of Descent with Ephraim and Manasseb, and it might have been doubtful whether they might not claim to be Rulers themselves, and equal to their Brothers, Jacob directs that they hould be reckoned in the Tribes of their two Brothers, They Shall be called after the Name of their Bretbren in their Inberitance 4. By this Defignation of Jacob, the two Sons of Joseph were appointed, each to be the Head of a separate People; for this, Jacob, speaking of these two Grandchildren declares, He. Manasseh, shall become a People, and be also (ball be great : But bis Brother Ephraim fall be greater than be, and his Seed shall become a Multitude of Nations 1. In the following Staged to material a Part of the History

Gen. xlviii. 5. † Gen. xlviii. 6. ‡ Gen. xlviii. 19.

Chapter Jacob speaks to his Sons as the Representatives of so many distinct People; which is expresly remarked by Moses, All thefe are the Twelve Tribes of Ifrael "; and it is evident likewife from hence, that the Things foretold and ascribed to them, are by no means capable of being understood of fingle Persons. Here the Promise to Abrabam, That he should be Father of many Nations; and to Sarab, That Kings of People should be of ber, began to take effect; for from this time forward the People of Ifrael are reckoned by their Tribes, which were fo many distinct People, or (in the Language of the Book of Genefis) Nations, independent of each other, and fubfifting under Rulers and Judges of their own, but confederated for mutual Defence, and the Maintenance of one Law to be given equally to all. It ought to be no Wonder to hear the Tribes of Ifrael called Nations, and their Heads Princes; for the fame Language is used of Ishmael's Twelve Sons: - These are the Sons of Ith-mael, and these are their Names, by their Towns, and by their Caftles, Twelve Princes according to their Nations +. These Princes could be no more than Heads of Tribes; I

^{*} Gen. klix. 28. † Gen. xxv. 16. † Vide Clericum in locum.

and fuch Princes likewife were the Dukes and the Kings of Edom. * Ishmael was the Son of Abraham, and Efau was Son of Ifaac; and their Families could not be much more numerous than Jacob's, and yet they are reckoned, according to their Princes, and their Dukes, and by their several Nations. In truth, all the Governments of the East feem at this Time to have been of this fort. What were the four Kings, think you, whom Abrabam overthrew with Three Hundred and Eighteen of his own Servants, and the Affistance of his three Friends, who might perhaps make as many more? What were the thirty-two Kings, whose Country was divided among the Twelve Tribes? The Princes of the Tribes of Unael were furely equal in Power and Dignity to fuch Kings; and such were the Kings of those Days. This Observation will teach us to restrain and limit our Ideas within due Bounds, when we read of Kings, and Princes, and Scepters, and Judges, and Nations, in these early Times; and not to imagine, because the Words are the same which we now use, that they must necessarily signify as high Degrees of Power as now they do.

What

Gen. xxxvi. Vide Clericum ad versum decimum quin-

What kind of Power Facob fettled upon these Heads of Tribes, may appear from what he himself says of Dan; Dan Shall judge bis People, as one of the Tribes of Ifracl . All the People of Ifrael were not Dan's People, and therefore it is abfurd to imagine any Power given to Dan, or any of his Descendants, over the whole House of Jacob. Belides, nothing peculiar is given to Dan in this Grant; he was to judge bis own People indeed; but how! Why, as one of the Tribes of Ifrael + Prom whence it is evident, that every Tribe had its own Princes and Judges and that every Prince, or Head of a Tribe, judged his own People; confequently every Tribe had a Sceptre, and a Lawgiver, as well as the Tribe of Judab.

That this Power in the Heads of Tribes took place immediately upon the Death of Jacob, may be collected from hence, that from this Time all Applications and Mcc fages are not to the People, but to the Elders of Ifrael 1. The Command of God fent to the House of Jacob, and the Children of H rael, in Egypt, was delivered by Mofes to the of the sinong their own teo

Gen. alix of selected from the Some of with † Quis penes ejus sobolem in communi politia pars gubernationis & imperii erit, ut tribus ista caput unum efficiat.

Elders of the People . The People and their Rulers are distinguished plainly in Exed. xxxiv. Aaron and all the Rulers of the Congregation returned unto him, and Moles talked with them. And Afterward all the Children of Ifrael came night this sign is the

The Government in the feveral Tribes of Ifrael was not monarchical, but aristocratical, as appears by comparing the Paffages referred to in the Margin 1; and that no one Tribe had a Superiority over another, is plain upon the Death of Joshulo &; for then the People enquire of God, who should go up for them against the Ganaanites | ? A Queftion that would not have been asked, had any one Tribe, or Ruler of one Tribe had the Right of leading and governing the rest. When the Children of Benjamin were guilty in the Matter of the Levite's Concubine, no one Tribe, or Ruler of one Tribe, pretends to call them to account for it; but all the Tribes of Ifrael jointly fend to expostulate with them, and to demand Justice; and upon Refusal of Justice, Recourse is had to Arme immediately. What Authority the Princes of Tribes had among their own People, may be collected from the Song of Deborab, stadw powes ejus fobolom in communi politin para gu-

Exod. xix. 3, 7. + Exod. xxxiv. 31, 32.

‡ Exod. vi. 14. Numb. xxxiv. 18.

§ Josh. xxii, 14. || Judges i. i.

where they are described, as Governors in Israel, riding on white Asses, and sitting in Judgment. And it is with Allusion to this Form of Government that our Saviour promises his Disciples, that they shall see on twelve Thrones, judging the twelve Tribes of Israel.

Having now feen the Constitution of the Tribes of Ifrael, and the Powers and Authorities incident to a Tribe, as such, we may look back to the Prophecy, and try whether this Light will direct us in the Exposition of it. Jacob having fettled twelve Princes, or Rulers of People, in his House, summons them together to hear what should befal them in the last Days; he speaks to them as Heads of People, and not as fingle Persons, and what he fays relates to them, and their People collectively, and not to them personally. Since then he fpeaks to all as Princes, and tells Judab in particular, that the SCEPTRE Should not depart from HIM until Shilob came, what can we understand by the Sceptre in this Place, but that very Power, and Right of Government, now fettled and effablished in the House of Judab, and in all the other Tribes, and which Jacob foresaw would depart from the other Tribes long before

^{*} Judges v. 9, 10. + Matth. xix. 28.

before the coming of Shibb; but would remain with Judah until Shibb came? The Promise to Judah, that his Sceptre should not depart, amounts to a Doclaration that the Sceptres of the other Thibes should depart, and plainly shows that the Sceptre was not a Thing peculiar to Judah; for the Promise here to Judah is not, that he should have a Sceptre, which none of his Brethren had, or were to have; but that his Sceptre should continue longer with him than his Brothers Sceptres should continue with them.

1

f

10

h

fi

P

7

a

th

T

D

ſp

pr

Most of the Interpreters whom I have confulted take it for granted, and it is the common Notion, that the Thing here promised to Judab is the Sceptre; and that the SCEPTER was not to be fettled in Fudable Family till fame Ages after the Death of Jacob: Which last Observation is grounded upon Jacob's Words - That I may tell you that which shall befal you in the last Days But the first of these Observations has no Ground in the Texts nay, rather, is abfolutely inconfishent within The antient Verfions all agree in one Senfe, the fame which our English Version has expected, The Soop tre shall not depart frem Judabs Doonet these Words suppose the Sceptre to be already in

ale Analy & Salama et verglet.

in the Hand of Judah? Is there any Sense in faying that a Thing shall not depart which never yet was in Possession? The Prophecy is not a Grant of the Sceptre, but a Confirmation of it; now a Confirmation of mothing is nothing, and to make it famething, the Poffession of the Thing confirmed must be supposed. I know not by what Rules of Language or Grammar these Words can be con-Arued into a Grant of the Sceptre; and the fo many Writers and Interpreters have followed this Sense, yet I do not remember to have feen one Paffage or parallel Expression from the Scripture, or any other Author, produced to justify the Interpretation. Yet furely it is no usual way of speaking, to say, Your Sceptre Shall not depart, when the Speech is directed to one who has no Sceptre, nor is to have one for many Ages.

The second Observation, when rightly applied, is right; and if the Continuance of the Sceptre of Judab be, as I suppose, the Thing foretold, it extends to the very last Days of the Jewish State; and in this re-

spect the Interpretation is justified.

Another Thing supposed by most Interpreters is, that the Sceptre here mentioned is an Emblem of Dominion over all the Tribes of Jacob. But how can that be? Had not

Г

Facos

Jacob settled a Sceptre in every Tribe? as is evident, ver. 16. Dan Shall judge his People as one of the Sceptres * of Ifrael. Suppose a Father had divided his Estate among twelve Sons, and should say of one of them, The Estate shall not depart from John for many Ages; could you possibly suppose him to mean more than the Share of the Effate given to John? Could you understand him to mean, that all the Estate, the twelve Shares, should come to John, and continue in his Family? The Case is the same here; twelve Princes are created, of one of them Jacob says, The Sceptre Shall not depart FROM HIM - until Shiloh come. Is it not plain, then that the Sceptres are diffinguished here, and that it is foretold of one, that it shall long out-last the rest? The Words therefore, The Sceptre skall not depart from Judab, are equivalent to these, Judab's Sceptre Shall not depart; and this Sense is justified by the Original, the Seventy, the Vulgate, and the Chaldee Paraphrast +. It must be remembered, that Judab does not in Gen. xlix. mean, what in After-times it came to mean, the whole People of the Yews;

f

2

ti

C

tl

u

I

n

th

ar

ber ma

his Scep

nock

* The original Word is Schevet, the same which is remdered Sceptre in the Prophecy relating to Judah.

⁺ Non auferetur principatum habens à Domo Judæ, C.P. The Ruler shall not be taken away from the House of Judah.

Jews; but it means distinctly the Tribe of Judah only; and the Words now under Consideration can possibly import no more than this, The Sceptre shall not be taken from the Tribe of Judah — Consequently the Sceptre here is an Emblem of Authority in and over a Tribe only; and can by no means, in these Circumstances, be made to signify or denote an Authority over all the Tribes of Israel.

0

n

e

e

n

it

1-

e,

ne

rt b's

is

he

It

it

he

75;

en-

P.

The same Word in the Original (Schevet) signifies a Tribe and a Sceptre; and probably a Tribe, because a Tribe is a Collection of People under the Government of one Sceptre, or Authority. Others, I know, account otherwise for this Signification. But the Seventy Interpreters would never have used the Greek Word oversport to denote a Tribe, had they not thought that the original Word was used to signify a Tribe, upon the Notion of its being a Body under one and the same Government. When the Peo-

* Traductum vero nomen est ad significandum tribum quod unaquæque tribus suam peculiarem virgam haberet, nomine suo inscriptam, quam tribuum principes manu gestare consueverant Cum Dominus Aaronem his verbis alloquitur; sed et fratres tuos de tribu Levi, & septrum Patris tui sume tecum; intellige sceptrum ipsum, & totam tribum quæ sceptro significabatur, & regebatur, Me-

nochius de rep. Heb. Lib. 1. cap. 4.

† Schevet; Tribus quod ex arbore seu stirpe nata sit, h.
e. è patre. Kircherus, Concord. in voce, Schevet.

ple were affembled for the Choice of a King, Samuel tays to them, Present yourselves before the Lord by your Tribes, name to complete value, (Seventy) and the Tribe of Benjamin was taken in, not nationally tall suffer for Benjamin (Seventy.) When God threatens Solomon to divide his Kingdom, he adds, but I will give one Tribe to thy Son i, supreprint it such to be seenty.) Many other Instances there are, but these are sufficient to shew the relation between the Seeptre and the Tribe, and that it is conformable to the Language and Usage of Scripture, to understand, by the Word Sceptre, the Authority in and over a single Tribe,

What the true Import of the Word Lawgiver is in this Place, cannot be determined,
but by Reference to the Government or Conflitution intended. When we know the Form
of Government, we can eafily determine
what Lawgiver fignifies; but we cannot
from the Word Lawgiver determine the
Form of Government intended. The Reaton is, because there are as many kinds of
Lawgivers as there are Forms of Government in the World. The Sense of the Word
Lawgiver in this Place must necessarily
therefore be governed by the Sense of the
Word

ti

0

gr

^{* 1} Sam. x. 19. + Ibid. ver. 20. 1 1 Kings xi. 13.

Word Sceptre. If Sceptre fignifies here the Authority and Power over a Tribe only, the Word Lawgiver, joined with it, must necesfarily be confined to mean fuch Lawgivers only as fingle Tribes had within themselves. Confequently, what has been faid to fix the Meaning of the Word Sceptre, ferves equally to fix the Sense of Lawgiver. The Seventy Interpreters have rendered the Word Schevet by "Apxor, and Mechokek by Hyunes. * Mr. Incourt suspects that they were led by a kind of national Pride and Vanity to make Choice of these Terms, that carry in them fuch grand Ideas of royal and princely Power. But before the paffing of this Censure, he ought to have examined whether the Seventy do constantly or usually employ these Terms to fignify to much Power as he fuppofes, "Arxwe and "Appertur are used by the Seventy above an hundred times at least to fignify the Head or Heads of the Tribes of Ifrael. There are twelve Instances of this Use of the Word in one Chapter of the Book of Numbers +, and about fixteen in another ‡. The Inftances indeed

^{*} Prevenus de toute la pompe de la superiorité & des grandeurs dont je viens de parler, ils ont cru que Schever, qui signific communement Verge, doit être en cet endroit une werge de Commandement; c'est pourquoi entrainez de ce beas côte ils ont traduit hardiment le Prince ne sera point see Juda. Letters Critiques, p. 163.

1 Numb. iv.

indeed are fo many, that it is quite needless to produce any, the Concordance will furnish Authorities to every Enquirer. The Case is the same as to the Word Hypurs. In 2 Chron. ver. 1. we meet with both these Words together in the same Sense. Solomon affembled all the Elders of Ifrael, xai warras Tes apyortas tor quadr, the hyblieres watplor tor vior-Ispana-So again, I Chron. vii. 4. All thefe were the Children of Afher, "Apxortes our marpion -- wyenero; דשר מפצטידשי דשי שביבמס (וווווים בי דוו במהוו דע שסאבוני. Thus the Sons of Efau, who were no other than Heads of Tribes, are called Hyspers, Gen. xxxvi. and the Sons of Ishmael, who were Princes of the same fort, are stiled, Gen. xxv. "Apyortes. What Reason is there now to suspect the Seventy of Vanity, Prejudice, or Artifice; or to suppose that they mean any higher Degree of Power by the Words in this Place, than they do in many other Places where they make use of them?

A Lawgiver from between bis Feet: There is no Interpretation of these Words, but what suits with the Exposition of the Prophecy now proposed; and therefore I may refer myself in this to the Reader's Choice among the several Interpretations given of this Phrase. The Words may be construed two ways, for we may either read

thus,

thus, A Lawgiver from between his Feet shall not depart from Judah; or thus, A Lawgiver shall not depart from between the Feet of Judah. In the first way of reading, the Meaning probably is, That the Lawgivers of Judah should be of his own Descendants; and so they were. In the second reading the Meaning is, That the Tribe of Judah should have Lawgivers of their own to the very last Times. This is Wagenseils * Sense of the Words; and it is the Sense of Onkelos.

2

1

. .

But suppose the original Word to be rightly rendered in this Place Lawgiver, it will afford a strong Objection against any Interpretation which extends the Powers here mentioned over all the People of Israel. For the Tribe of Judab never had a Legislative Authority over all the Tribes; no, not even in the Days of David and Solomon. When the People desired a King, they expressed their Meaning very clearly, to have a Judge, and one to go out before them to fight their Battles †. And when Samuel rehearses to them the Manner of their King, there is no Appearance that he was to be a Lawgiver. And Moses, who was the only

Carminis Lipmanni confutatio, p. 293.

Lawgiver of the People of Ifrael, had excluded all Kings from this Power. They were to have a Copy of the Law, and not to turn afide from the Commandment, to the Righthand or to the Left +. And the Ordinances made by David, relating to the Service of the Temple, were established by Authority and Confent of the Princes and Rulers of Tribes ‡. So little Appearance is there that Judab was ever Lawgiver to all the Tribes of Facob. Nor indeed could this Power in a proper Sense belong to single Tribes; for tho' they might, and did make fuch Rules, as we commonly call Bye-laws, yet the Law of Moses was their unalterable Law, both for Civil and Ecclefiastical Affairs. And therefore I rather chuse to understand Judge (for so the Word in the Original may be underderstood) than Lawgiver, in this Place; and this agrees best to the Passage referred to before, Dan Shall JUDGE bis People as one of the Tribes of Ifrael.

As to the Word Shilob, I have nothing to add to the Expositions of the Learned. They who are defirous to fee the feveral Ways of accounting for the Signification of this Word, may consult the Authors referred to

to by Wagenfeil *, Le Clerc +, and Saurin +. If by this Word we understand Pacificus, the Peacemaker, or Restorer of Peace, who can it defign, but him in whose Time there was to be abundance of Peace, and Righteousness for evermore? If we understand by it, Mittendus, the Person to be fent, who can that be, but the fame, of whom fo many Promises and Prophecies had been given; even the bleffed Seed? If we chuse rather to interpret Filius ejus, his Son; who is this peculiar Son of Judab, but the bleffed Seed; the Promise of which was settled on Judah? If we take the Version of the Seventy for our Guide, and render the Word with them, τα αποχειμενα αυτω, Or ω αποχειται the fame Person still is pointed out; the Bleffed Seed was the great Treasure in reserve for Judab; the bleffed Seed was he for whom all Things were referved, whose the Kingdom was to If, lastly, we follow Mr. Le Clerc, and render the Word Finis, (the End,) what End can be intended, but the End of the Settlement and Establishment made by Jacob at this Time; or, in other Words, the End of God's present Covenant, in virgue of which the Division of the Land of Canean was made the Commence

Carm: Lip. conf. p. 294 + In locusn. ‡ Discourse 41, . . 519, &c.

made among the twelve Tribes of Jacob, and which was to be succeeded by the Covenant of better Hopes? In all Views the Prophecy must terminate in Christ; and a Continuance of the Power now settled in the House of Judab is promised till the Messiah comes. This agrees with the Sense of all antient Expositors, both Jews and Christians, as may be seen in the Authors already mentioned.

All these Expositions depend upon the Interpretation of the Word Shilob. And if we consider the Context, it will carry us to the same Point. Judab is the only one who received two Bleffings from his Father, viz. The Promise of the bleffed Seed, and a Portion in the Land of Canaan, for the Maintenance of which a Government was established in his Family. This Prophecy promises a longer Continuance of the Government in the House of Judah, than other Tribes were to expect, and fixes a Term for the Duration of Judah's Sceptre. What could make this Distinction, but the peculiar Bleffing given to Judah? And taking both his Bleffings together, is it not natural to think, that the Continuance of his temporal Dominion and Inheritance is affured to him to last till the Commencement of his better

Promise? This is according to the Analogy of all the Prophecies from Abraham's Time; in all which the Land of Canaan is inseparably annexed to the Promise of the blessed Seed. Whoever had the one Promise had the other; whoever was excluded from the one was excluded from the other. For this Reason Ishmael and Esau were sent out to plant other Countries, and had not a Foot allowed them in the Land of Canaan. Upon the Settlement made by Jacob in his Family, the Land of Canaan was divided, but that Part of it which attended upon the Promise of the bleffed Seed, was (as formerly) fo united and annexed to that Promise, that it could not be intirely forfeited and lost 'till the bleffed Seed came. And this is the Reafon why the Land of Judab, in distinction from the Land possessed by the other Tribes, is called by the Prophet Isaiab, the Land of Immanuel. He shall pass through Judah, be shall overflow and go over, be shall reach even to the Neck, and the firetching out of his Wings shall fill the Breadth of thy Land, O Immanuel, Ifa. viii. 8. What other Reason can be affigned for calling the Land of the House of Judab, the Land of Immanuel, rather than any other Part of the Land of Canaan, but this very Prophecy now under

Consideration? which was indeed a Settlement of the Land of Judah, for a Term not to expire 'till Immanuel came.

Unto bim shall the gathering of the People be. They who understood this Paffage, as relating to the Messiah, have great Reason on their Side, as well from parallel Places of Scripture, as from the Authority of the most antient Interpreters. But yet some learned Men are otherwise minded. and think that these Words by natural Con-Aruction are to be referred to Judab"; and confidering that Judab is the Person here principally concerned, and whose Condition in the last Days is described; that Shiloh is not, in grammatical Construction, the principal Person in this Passage, but is mentioned only as the Terminus ad quem, the Term to which the Sceptre should continue with Judah; it feems more confonant to the Rules of Language to appropriate this Character to Judah, than to Shiloh. As to the main of the Prophecy, there is no Difference which ever way we take. According to the last of the two Interpretations, the Prophecy contains a most exact Description of the State and Polity of Judab, during the Continuance

See Mr. Le Clerc's Comment and Note upon the Place.

of his Sceptre after the Sceptres were removed from the other Tribes of Ifrael, that can be imagined. For the Remnant of all the Tribes after the Affyrian Captivity, were indeed gathered to Judah, and fell under the Obedience of that one Tribe; and the whole Nation, from being styled the People of Ifrael, were thenceforwards ftyled the People of Judah, or Jews. In this Sense, the Prophecy began to operate immediately upon the Division of the two Kingdoms. God promised Solomon to give one Tribe to bis Son for bis Servant David's fake *, which is twice again repeated in the same Chapter +, But in truth two Tribes, that of Judab and that of Benjamin, together with part of the Tribe of Simeon, and many Families, of the Levites, and of the other Tribes, who dwelt within the Borders of Judah, remained under the Obedience of the Kingdom of Judab; and no Reason can be given why this Body is called one Tribe, but only this, that the Tribe of Judah alone maintained its Power and Constitution, the rest were all gathered to this Tribe, and funk in it. This Account may be collected from the Text itself; 'tis said, that the Children of Israel, which dwelt in the Cities of Judah,

^{* 1} Kings xi. 13. + Ibid. ver. 32, 36.

Rehoboam reigned over them *. And when an Account is given of Reboboam's raising Forces to recover his Kingdom, 'tis faid expressly, that he affembled all the House of Judah with the Tribe of Benjamin +. And yet in the very Verse before 'tis said, there was none that followed the House of David, but the Tribe of Judah only 1. Yet Rill, when God fends a Meffage to those under the Obedience of Reboboam, they are mentioned thus, The House of Judah and Benjamin, and the Remnant of the People ||. These are they who afterwards were comprehended under the Name of Jews; a Term introduced to fignify the Tribe of Judab, and all the rest of the People united with and under that Tribe. From the Division of the Kingdoms Judab was confidered as making the People of one entire Kingdom, and gave name to all affociated with them. We have a clear Account how this Matter stood in the second Book of Chronicles. The Priests and the Levites that were in all Israel resorted to Rehoboam, out of all their Coasts - And after them, out of all the Tribes of Israel, fuch as fet their Hearts to feek the Lord God of Israel, came to Jerufalem

^{* 1} Kings xii. 17. † Ibid, ver. 21. † Ibid. ver. 20, | Ibid. ver. 23.

salem, to sacrifice unto the Lord God of their Fathers. So they ftrengthened the Kingdom of Judah *. All who came from other Tribes were considered but as an additional Strength to Judah, they preserved no distinct Polity of their own as belonging to other Tribes. From the Time of the Affyrian Captivity, the Case is very plain; there remained, without doubt, many private Families and Persons in the Land, who escaped in the general Confusion; but they subfifted not as Parts of distinct Tribes, but fell under the Dominion and Power of Judab; as appears in the Reformation made by King Josiah, which reached, not only to the Cities of Judah, but to all the Countries that pertain'd to the Children of Israel, to the Cities of Manasseh and Ephraim, and Simeon, even unto Napthali +; Cities, in which the Kings of Judab had no Influence or Authority, fo long as the separate Kingdom of Ifrael subsisted. After the Return from the Babylonish Captivity, we hear of little else but 'Jews, tho' we know, the Benjamites were join'd with them; and the Decree of Cyrus being a general Permission for the Return

^{* 2.} Chron xi, 13, 16, 17. xv, 9. † 2 Chron xxxiv. 6, 33.

Return of all the Tribes, many Families of other Tribes return'd to their own Country: But all these were gathered to Judah, and became one People +. And in this State and Condition Things continu'd till the Coming of Christ 1, and the last Destruction of the Nation by the Roman Power |.

n

of

be

W

ev

F

T

an

W

gr

the

of

rity

the Wa

Tr

car

If we consider how the Event corresponds to this Interpretation of the Prophecy in other Respects, we shall find that from the Death of Jacob, there was a Government fettled in the feveral Tribes, with respect to their own distinct People; that the Heads of Tribes together did, by common Confent, administer the Affairs of the People in general. This appears during the Abode of the Children of Ifrael in Egypt; for Moses and Aaron were fent to the Elders of the People ; these Elders were Heads of Houses, as appears foon after in the History +, and Rulers of the Congregation . That the People were form'd into Tribes in Egypt, is plain; becaufe

^{† 1} Chron ix. 3. ‡ Luke ii. 36. | Acts xxvi. 7.

* Exod. iii 16. iv. 29. Fur reputar ver Ispans.

The Senate of the Children of Ifrael. LXX. Catum filiorum Ifrael. Vulg. Exod. xii. 3.

⁺ Exed. vi. 14. 'Apxil's other wa poor actor LXX. Principes domorum per familias fuas, Vulg.

I Exod xvi 22. "Apxorles The gura forms LXX.

cause they are mention'd in that Capacity as foon as they got into the Wilderness, without any new Order or Constitution to make them fo. The Stones of the Priest's Breast-plate were twelve by the Appointment of God, to answer to the Number, and to bear the Names of the twelve Tribes "; and when God orders an Account to be taken of the Number of the Children of Ifrael, foon after their coming out of Egypt, a Man of every Tribe, and Head of the House of bis Fathers, is appointed to affist Moses +. These Heads of Houses are particularly reckon'd up and nam'd; and their Quality and Dignity in Ifrael is fet forth in these Words, These were the Renowned of the Congregation, Princes of the Tribes of their Fathers, Heads of Thousands in Israel ‡.

Since then there were Elders, and Heads of Houses in Egypt, who acted with Authority for the People, and to whom, therefore, the Message of God by Moses and Aaron was directed: Since the Distinction of Tribes appears plainly as soon as the People came out of Egypt, and Princes of the

^{*} Levit. + Num. i. 3. 1 Ibid. ver. 16.

People appear transacting the Affairs of their People; and no Appointment or Constitution to settle these Tribes appears from the Time of Jacob; and since there is no mention of any Tribe in Israel, until Jacob's Appointment of them just before his Death; it is manifest, that this Constitution owes its Rise to Jacob's Appointment, and took place from that Time.

r

R

m

th

ph

on

un

in

COI

in l

pro

tivi

Bal

Yea

tivit

if w

ed a

ly e

* Se Teftar

From this Time to the Time of the Captivity of Babylon, there is no Suspicion that the Tribe of Judah wanted Rulers and Princes within themselves: The Power of the Heads of Tribes subsisted under the Government of the Kings of Judah and Israel, and was so considerable, that nothing of Moment was done without their Advice

and Consent *.

The ten Tribes, which constituted the Kingdom of Ifrael, were carried into Captivity by Salmaneser about seven hundred Years before Christ; and this put an End

* Hi Tribuum Principes Reipublicæ Hebraicæ erant Megistanes, & Capita, & totius Populi Magistratui, sive judex esset sive Rex, aderant, & cum illo sedentes partim consilio inibant, partim jus reddebant. Quinetiam simul cum summo Reipublicæ Capite, Judice, aut Rege, obligabant, si quid esset jure jurando publico sanciendum. Menoch. de. Rep. Heb. Lib. 1. cap. 6.

to the Being of these Tribes; they never recovered again, or appeared as a People from that Time to this. And here the Completion of the Prophecy relating to the Continuation of Judab's Sceptre, after the Removal of the others, has its Commencement.

The Division of the Kingdom prepar'd the Way for the Completion of this Prophecy. Had all the Tribes continu'd under one Head, they would probably have all undergone the same Fate; but being divided in Interest, and having different Kings, and consequently not being concern'd together in Matters of Peace and War, their Fortunes proved very different; for the Asyrian Captivity was Ruin to the ten Tribes, but the Babylonish Captivity was only a seventy Years Punishment to Judah.

1,

of ce

ne

ti-

ed

nd

to

rant

five

rtim mul obli-

lum.

The seventy Years of the Babylonish Captivity, is the only Period of Time that can create any Difficulty upon this Scheme. But if we consider that the Jews were not carried to Babylon to be Slaves, but were transplanted as a Colomy, to people the great, and newly enlarged, City of Babylon*; that they

^{*} See Dr. Prideaux's Connexion of the Old and New Testament, Part I. B. 2. p. 96. 8vo. Edit.

(8)

are commanded therefore by the Prophet, to build Houses and plant Gardens; and to feek the Peace of the City, in which they were Captives +; Circumstances, which prove them not to have been Slaves in Babylon: That upon the Expiration of the feventy Years, many of them were fo well settled in Ease and Plenty, that they refus'd to return to their own Country again: If we consider further, that the Jews lived at Babylon as a diffinct People, and were govern'd in their own Affairs by their own Rulers and Elders, appointed Feasts and Fasts, and ordered all other Matters relating to their own civil and ecclefiaftical Affairs within themselves +; it will take off the Weight of this Difficulty, and shew us that the Power and Sceptre of Judah, relative to

W

21

T

fu

VC

T

BO

gre

ing

the

Ped

aga

† The Decree for destroying the Jews in Apocryphul Esther, is founded in this, That they had Laws contrary to all Nations, and continually despited the Commandatests of the King, c. xiii. ver. 4. And when the Decree is reversed, they are faid to live by most just Laws, c. xvi. ver. 15. Esther, in her Prayer for the People, soys, O Lord, give not thy Sceptre unto them that be nothing, and let them not laugh at our Fall, c. xiv. 11. And if the Writer

-C+ Jer. xxix. (5,07.

of the History of Susanna knew any Thing of the State of the Jews in Babylon, 'tis plain they had Rulers and Judges of their own, who executed their Laws even in capital Causes, ver. 41, and 62.

B I wall permanent

the Being and Subfiltence of the Tribe were not removed during this Captivity. And indeed, what Reaton is there to think that this Confliction was differb'd by the transplanting the People to Babylon, which began under the Power of the Kings of Egypt, and subsisted with all the Forms and Changes of Government, which the People of Ifraehunderwent, from their coming out of the Egyptian Bondage, to their go ing into the Captiniby of Babylon? Suno we ant, from thew Accounts preferved in the Book of Exha and Nabeniah P, that the Tribes of Judab and Benjamin sublisted as fuchi during the Captivity, and preferred very regular Accounts of theh Genealogies: That they had likewife their Chiefs and Elders, who decided their Affairs, there is no doubt; they are mebtion dia Earle and Nebemials, as the Persons managing the great Affairs of the Actorn, and re-establishing the Service of God in Herufation: That they came back to their own Country as a People and Nation govern'd by their own Laws, is evident from the Complaint fent against them to Actororses, in which they make

d

rs

e

at

10

10

ul

nts re-

er.

rd, let

ter of

ges (es,

| Ezra i. 5. ii. 68. iii. 12. viii 1. ix. 1. x. 14. Nehem. ii. 16. iv. 14, 19. vi. 17.

make too great a Figure, and are represented too considerable to be thought a Set of mere Slaves, subjected intirely to a foreign Yoke, without Law or Government of . their own *. 'Tis true, that from the Time of their Captivity, the Jews were never fo free a People again, as they had been formerly; they liv'd under the Subjection of the Persian Monarch, and under the Empire of the Greeks and Romans to their last Destruction; but still they liv'd as a distinct People, govern'd by their own Law +: And the Authority of the Persian and other Kings over them, deftroy'd not the Rule and Authority of Judab, which subsisted with it. as it had, in its first Commencement, subfifted under the Kings of Egopt, and oftentimes under Judges and Kings of their own. How the Case stood in the Time of the Asmonean Princes, may be collected from feveral Passages of the Maccabees; but especially from the Preambles of publick engas I to back to their own Country as a

There is a second of the second of the second

W C1 ... W br !!

^{*}Ezra iv. 11.

† Artaxerxes's Commission to Ezra is express, that he should appoint such Magistrates and Judges, as know the Laws of thy God.

Leagues made by, and with the Jews * Historians oftentimes speak loosely, but authentick publick Acts preserve Forms, and thew in what Hands the Government resides. The Ambassadors sent from Jeru-salem to Rome, speak in the Name of Judas Maccabeus and his Brethren, and the People of the Jews .- The League which followed upon this Application to Rome is styl'd, A Covenant with the People of the Jews ! When the League was made with the Lacedæmonians, the publick Letter was in the following Style, Jonathan the High-priest, and the Elders of the Nation and the Princes, and the other People of the Jews. When Simon was their Governor, his Authority was convey'd to him, in the Congregation of the Princes and the People, and Rulers of the Nation, and Elders of the Country ||. These are elsewhere call'd, the Council, and the rest of the Jews ; and the People of the These Instances are sufficient to hew

Περσων η μετ' εκεινες ηγυμενών της Asias Manedoras, 'Αιρωπλίοι μεν εδυλευον ανδραποδών υδεν διαφεροντες' ημας δε οντες εκευθεροι προσετί η των περίζ πολεων ηρχομεν, &c Josep. contra Apion. libro secundo, Sect. II.

^{† 1} Mac. viii. 20. ‡ Ibid. v. 29. xii. 3, xv, 17. | Ibid. xii. 6, 14, 20. * 1 Mac. xiv. 28. † 2 Mac. xi 27. Ibid. v. 34.

shew, that the Polity of the Jews, as a distinct People, under Heads and Rulers of their own, subsisted in this Period, and was not extinguish'd by the Power of the Asmonean Princes.

That Things continued in this State to the very Death of Christ, may be evinced from many Passages in the Gospel; some I shall

produce, and close this Article.

When our Saviour tells the Jews, the Truth Shall make you free, they reply, We are Abraham's Children, and were never in Bondage to any Man ||. Surely, they had not forgot their Captivity in Babylon, much less could they be ignorant of the Power of the Romans over them at that time, and yet you fee they account themselves free; and fo they were; for they lived by their own Laws, and executed Judgment among them-This is plain from the Case of the Woman taken in Adultery; Moses in the Law, fay the Scribes and Pharifees, commanded us that such should be stoned, but what sayest thou *? When our Saviour foretels his Difciples that they should be delivered up to Councils

cils, and fourged in Synagogues *, he shews at the same time what Power and Authority were exercised in the Councils and Synagogues of the Jews: When Pilate, willing to be delivered of Jesus, says to the Jews, Take ye him, and crucify him +, and again, Take ye him and judge him according to your own Law 1; he also shews, that the Jews lived under their own Law, and had the Exercise of judicial Authority among themselves 4. This was the Condition of Things at the Death of Christ.

By this Deduction it appears evidently, That the Sceptre placed in the Hand of Judab, by his Father Jacob just before his Death, continued in his Posterity till the very Death of Christ. From that Time all Things began to work towards the Destruction of the Jewish Polity, and within a few Years, their City, Temple, and Government were utterly ruined; and the Jews, not carried into a gentle Captivity, to enjoy their Law, and live as a distinct People in a foreign

Sense;

Country, but they were fold like Beafts in a Market, and became Slaves in the strictes

Mat. x. 17. Tohn xix. 6. 1 John xviii. 31.
§ See this proved at large by Wagenfeil. Car. Lip. Con,
pag. 299, &c.

Sense; and from that Day to this have had neither Prince nor Lawgiver among them. Nor will they ever be able, after all their Pretences, to shew any Signs or Marks of the Sceptre among them, till they discover the unknown Country, where never Mankind dwelt, and where the Apocryphal Esdras has placed their Brethren of the ten Tribes *.

Before I take leave of this Subject, it is necessary to observe, That this Interpretation of the Prophecy of Jacob relating to Judab, is very much confirmed by another Prophecy given by Moses, not long before his Death. In the xxxiiid Chapter of Deuteronomy Mojes bleffes the Tribes; and as there are many Passages in this last Benediction of Moles, which correspond to the Bleffings pronounced by Jacob, so particularly, the Bleffing of Judab by Mafes feems to relate to the last State of that Tribe, and the Continuance of the Sceptre of Judah, after, the Difpersion of the other Tribes. The Words of Moses are these; Hear, Lord, the Vaice of Judah, and bring bim unto bis Perple: Let bis Hands be sufficient for him, and be thou an Help to him from his Enemies +. This Benediction cannot relate to the Time no egral is beyond to when

^{* 2} Efd. xiii. 41,

[†] Deut. xxxiii. 7.

when it was given, for then Judab's Hands were very fufficient for him, this Tribe being by much the greatest of the twelve Tribes. as appears by two different Accounts of the Forces of Ifrael in the Book of Numbers; and there was more Reason to put up this Petition for feveral other Tribes, than for Judab. Besides, what is the Meaning of bringing Judab to bis People? How were he and his People at this Time separated? What means likewise the other Part of the Petition? Be thou an Help to him from his Enemies. This Petition supposes a State of Diftress; yet what Diftress was Judab in at this Time, at least what greater Distress than the other Tribes? The antient Targums, and fome old Versions, understand the first Petition of bringing Judah back to his People, to be only a Request in his behalf for safe Return from the Day of Battle; but was there not the same Reason for the same Petition in behalf of every Tribe? Nay, how much better would it have fuited Reuben, Gad, and . the half Tribe of Manaffeb, who left their People and their Settlements on the other Side of Jordan, and passed over the River in the very Front of the Battle to affift their Brethren? +

Numb. i. and xxvi. + Josh. iv. 12.

But if you refer this Prophecy to the Brow phecy of Yacob, and to the Continuance of the Sceptre of Judah after the Destruction of the other Tribes, every Expression is natural and proper, and fuited to the Occasion. Do but suppose Moses in the Spirit of Prophecy to have a Sight of the State of Affairs when all the People were in Captivity, and you will fee how this prophetic Prayer answers to that State. All the Tribes were in Captivity, the ten Tribes in Affyria, and Judah in Babylon; but it was implied in Jacob's Prophecy, that Judab should retain the Seep tre, and return again; for Judationly therefore does Mojes pray, that be may come to bis People again. Jacob had foretold, that at this Time the gathering of the People Should be to Judab; that he should be all in all, the only Head of all the Remnant of Ifrael, These People, destined to be gathered to 74dab, were now dispersed in all Parts of the Bast, and were no People, could be no People, till the Return of Judah; at which Return many of all the Tribes were to join themselves to Judah, and with him to form one People; how properly then does Mofes pray, that Judab might return to bis People. Let bis Hands be sufficient for bim: Good Reafon

Reason was there for this Petition, for scarcely were his Hands fufficient at the Return from Babylon. The Tribe of Yudab * in Mofes his Time confifted of 76,500, reckoning only those of twenty Years old and poward. But upon the Return from Babylon, Judab with Benjamin, the Lewites, and the Remnant of Ifrael, made only 42,360+; and in fo weak a State they were, that Sonbellat in great Scorn faid, What do thefe feeble Jews? I And the People themselves complain, as being not sufficient to go thro' the Toil of building the Wall: And Judah faid, The Strength of the Bearers of Burdens is decayed, and there is much Rubbish, so that we are not able to build the Wall &.

Be thou an Help to him from his Enemies. The Books Exra and Nebemiah are convincing Proofs of the great Difficulties and Oppositions which the Yews found in ferting up their Temple and City. Once their Enemies had so prevailed, that Orders came from the Court of Perfia to Stop all their Proceedings; and even at last, when Nebemich came to their Affistance with a new Commission from Artaxenses, they were so iell ai deoi may bene achiever anche belet

[•] Numb. ii. 6.

¹ Nch. iv. 2.

[†] Ezra ii. 46. § Neh. iv. 10.

beset with Enemies, that the Men employed in building the Wall, every one with one of bis Hands wrought in the Work, and with the other Hand held a Weapon *.

Lay these two Prophecies now together: Jacob foretels that Judab's Sceptre should continue till Shilob came; which is in effect foretelling that the Sceptres of the other Tribes should not continue so long. Moses in the Spirit of Prophecy fees the Desolation of all the Tribes; he sees the Tribes of the Kingdom of Ifrael carried away by the Af-Syrians, the People of Judab by the Babylonians; he fees that Judah should again return, weak, baraffed, and scarcely able to maintain himself in his own Country; for them therefore he conceives this prophetic Prayer: Hear, Lord, the Voice of Judab, and bring him unto bis People: Let bis Hands be sufficient for bim, and be thou an Help to bim from bis Enemies.

You will say, perhaps, why did not Jacob foretel also the Continuance of the Sceptre of Benjamin, for the Tribe of Benjamin run the same Fortune with that of Judab; they went together into Captivity, they returned home together, and were both in Be-

.a di des N &

ing when Shilob came? In answer to this I

have two Things to offer.

First, It has already appeared, that from the Division of the Kingdoms after the Death of Solomon, the Tribe of Benjamin, and the Remnant of Israel, that is, Part of all the other Tribes, adhered to Judah, and formed one People under Judah as their Head; and this was consonant unto Jacob's Prophecy, Unto him shall the gathering of the

People be.

Secondly, Tho' the Continuance of the Sceptre of Benjamin is not foretold (for the Sceptre was to be Judab's) yet the Continuance of the Tribe or People of Benjamin is distinctly foretold both by Jacob and Mofes. The Bleffing of Benjamin, as delivered by Jacob, is thus: Benjamin shall ravin as a Wolf; in the Morning he shall devour the Prey, and at Night he shall divide the Spoil. As delivered by Moses, it is thus: Of Benjamin, he faid, The Beloved of the Lord shall dwell in Safety by him, and the Lord shall cover him all the Day long, and he shall dwell between his Shoulders. When Jacob professes to declare what shall befal his Sons in the last Times, is it hard to say what must be understood by the Morning and Night in Jacob's

Jacob's Prophecy concerning Benjamin? The natural Morning and Night cannot possibly be understood here; and what other Morning and Night can you suppose intended, but the Morning and the Night of the Jewish State *? For this State is the Subject of all Jacob's Prophecy from one End to the other; consequently it is here foretold of Benjamin, that he should continue to the very last Times of the Jewish State. And this Interpretation is confirmed by Moses his Prophecy, for the Prophecy of Moses is in truth an Exposition of Jacob's Prophecy. Benjamin, says Moses, Shall dwell in Safety; the Lord shall cover him ALL THE DAY LONG, be shall dwell between his Shoulders. What is this, all the Day long? You fee how Benjamin is distinguished; he is to dwell in Safety, under the Cover of the Lord, and between his Shoulders all the Day long. Does not this import a Promise of a longer Continuance to Benjamin, than to the other Tribes? And was it not most exactly fulfilled?

The learned Bochart, upon very slight Grounds, supposes an Inversion in the Order of

^{*} Thus some Jewish Interpreters, referred to by Bochart, under stood the Expression. Mane, id est primis Israelitici regni temporibus — Sub vesperam, id est post Captivitatis Babylonicæ tempora. Hieron. cap. 10. pag. 828.

of the Words in Jacob's Prophecy concerning Benjamin; and by the Morning and the Night, he understands the Night and Morning; fo that the Time described is, in his Sense, the whole Night, and not the whole Day. All this is built upon the Property of the Wolf, to which Benjamin is compared: It is a Night Wolf, fays Bochart, which catches the Prey in the Night, and feeds on it in the Morning. But I very much question whether the Style of the Scripture will bear the Test of such Classic Nicety and Exactness. And the this Imagination has been followed by considerable Commentators, yet fince Moses, in his own Prophecy on Benjamin, has expounded this Morning and Night, by all the Day long, there is no room to make any further Question about it.

I have nothing more to add, but to acquaint the Reader, that the Interpretation of Jacob's Prophecy, now advanced, is not a mere Invention of my own; it is, as to the main Point, the same with that which is the fourth in Huetius, and by him rejected, but for fuch Reasons as have been fully obviated in this Account. It is the fame with Junius and Tremellius, and our own learned

DIG.

learned Countryman Ainfworth, espoused; and which not many Years ago was revived and improved by Mr. Ioncourt. This last mentioned Gentleman published several Letters upon obscure Passages of Scripture, and among the rest one upon the Sceptre of Judah, which are very well worth the reading. As to the Letter upon the Scepere of Judah, if I had thought nothing wanting in it to clear this Prophecy, I would not have troubled the World with this Differtation. But whether I have succeeded better in this Attempt than those who have gone before me in the same Argument, belongs not to me to judge.



DIS

with Pality or many arising



CHRIST's Entry into Jerusalem.

PERSONAL PROPERTY AND PROPERTY

Piece of Scripture History are well known, and not less to those who despise, than to those who receive the Gospel.

My Intention is to consider the Prophecy relating to this Fact, as it stands in Zechariah, Chap. ix. ver. 9. And tho' the Subject of this Differtation has no immediate relation to the preceding Discourses, yet it may not perhaps be improper to subjoin to them the Explication of a Passage, which is sure always to find its way into every Conversation or Controversy upon the Subject of Prophecy.

There is indeed no Circumstance relating to the Mestiah that has given Occasion to more profane Wit and Ridicule than this now before us. We reckon an As to be a X 2 contemp-

contemptible Creature; and a Man, especially a Man of Character, riding upon an Ass, to be a ridiculous Figure. These are Prejudices of our Time and Country. And when they, who look no further than to the Manners and Customs which are before them, examine this Part of sacred Story by the Standard of modern Prejudices, they see, or think they see, something quite inconsistent with the Gravity and Dignity of the Person pretending to be King of the Jews, when Christ is represented entring in Triumph into Jerusalem mounted on an Ass.

But, contemptible as an Ass, or a Man riding on an Ass, may be at present, from the Beginning it was not so. In many Countries, and particularly in Judea, Persons of the highest Distinction were usually so mounted. The Governors of Israel are described in the Song of Deborah as riding on white Asses, (Judg. v. 10.) And the thirty Sons of Jair, who was Judge and Prince over Israel twenty-two Years, are said to ride on thirty Asses, (Judg. x. 4.) And another Judge of Israel is recorded to have had forty Sons and thirty Nephews that rode on seventy Ass Colts, (Judg. xii. 14.)

Were it at all necessary, it would be easy

to confirm this Observation with many more Authorities; but this Passage of Scripture will furnish other Enquiries, and of a more serious Consideration.

For, supposing it to have been an usual thing to ride on an Ass, how comes this usual thing to be mentioned in relation to the Messias as a Mark of Distinction? Might not the Prophet upon this Supposition as well have said he should come walking on soot? And would he not have been as well known by one Character as by the other? Besides,

If you turn to the Book of Zechariah, where this Prophecy is to be found, you will fee the Person there described to be a King, a just King, and one having Salvation: And what is there in this Character of riding on the Fole of an Ass that is peculiar to a King, to a just King, and to one who was to bring Salvation and Deliverance to his People?

If we look into the present, or into the antient World, we shall not find Reason to appropriate this Character to Kings: Those of Egypt, Assyria, and of other Nations Neighbours to Judea, rode in another manner: Much less shall we be able to find any Connexion between the Justice and Ability

X 3

of a Prince to save his People, and this Circumstance of riding on the Fole of an Ass.

Since then this prophetical Character can never be accounted for by confidering the State and Condition of Kings in general; there must needs have been something very peculiar in the Circumstances of a King of Israel, on which the Propriety of this Character is founded.

I shall therefore endeavour to trace out this peculiar Circumstance, and to set this Prophecy in a proper Light, which has been very greatly abused; and, perhaps, only because it has been very little understood.

If we look into the History of the Rise and Fall of Nations, we shall generally find that their Prosperity and Success have born some Proportion to their Force and Power, and to the Conduct and Ability of their Leaders. But with the Jews, who from Slaves in Egypt, became a great and powerful People, the Case was not so. The best and greatest of their Kings, and he who carried the Empire to the greatest Height, has left us another Account of their Affairs. "The People, says he, got not the Land in "Possession by their own Sword, neither did their own Arm saye them: But thy right "Hand

" Hand and thine Arm, and the Light of " thy Countenance, because thou hadft a "Favour unto them." (Pfal. xliv. 3:) When, we read this, and other like Paffages, we are apt to ascribe them to the Piety and Devotion of the Pfalmift, and to look upon them. only as Acknowledgments of God's general Providence in the Affairs of the World; and this makes us apt to overlook, or not sufficiently to attend to the historical Truth which they contain. It is true, indeed, that all Success may in a just Sense be ascribed to God; and that it is He, who giveth Victory unto Kings: But yet he ordinarily makes use of natural Means; and it is no Offence to his Providence, that Princes lift their Thousands of Horse and Foot, to secure themselves and their Dominions. But with the Yews it was otherwise: They were never so weak, as when they made themselves strong; never To certainly ruined, as when their Force was great enough to create in them a Confidence in themselves. For God had taken the Defence of Ifrael upon Himself; and whenever the People took it out of his Hands, and placed it in their own, they were fure to be undone.

Nay, so tender was God of his Honour X 4 in

in this respect; and so concerned to justify his Promife, to defend Ifrael, in the Eyes of the World, that he would not always permit natural Causes to interfere in their Deliverance, left the People should grow doubtful to whom they should ascribe their Victories. When Gideon stood up to deliver the People from the Midianites, he raised an Army of thirty-two thousand Men: God refused to go forth with fo great an Host, and the Reafon given for it is this; " The People that " are with thee, are too many for me to " give the Midianites into their Hands, left " Ifrael vaunt themselves against me, saying, " Mine own Hand hath faved me." (Judg. vii. 2. Accordingly, the thirty-two Thousand were reduced to three Hundred, and by them the Host of Midian was overthrown.

To come nearer to our present Purpose. For the same Reason it was that God would not permit the People to have Horses and Chariots of War for their Desence; not because they were thought useless in War, for it is well known that the Strength of the antient Militia consisted chiefly in them, as appears in the Scripture-History, and in the oldest Writers of profane Story. Such was the Strength of Egypt, and such the Force

of the Asseriums, and of the other Eastern Nations. And it is observable, that when God is introduced in the Book of Job, setting forth the great Works of the Creation, he describes the Horse as if made on purpose for the Day of Battle. "Hast thou says "God) given the Horse Strength? hast

"thou'clothed his Neck with Thunder?

" Canst thou make him afraid as a Grass-

" hopper? The Glory of his Nostrils is ter-

" rible.

"He paweth in the Valley, and rejoiceth in his Strength; he goeth on to meet the

armed Men.

" He mocketh at Fear, and is not affright-

ed; neither turneth he back from the

"i Sword, but finisgs elabol dann a poith at

"The Quiver rattleth against him, the

" glittering Spear and Shield.

"He swalloweth the Ground with Fierce-

"ness and Rage; neither believeth he that it

" is the Sound of the Trunpet.

" He faith among the Trumpets, Ha,

" ha; and he smelleth the Battle afar off,

" the Thunder of the Captains, and the

"Shoutings."

But this Courage, this Aptness for War in Horses, was the very Reason why God would

would not fuffer his People to make use of them for their Defence. He himself had undertaken their Cause, and he wanted neither Horse nor Foot to fight his Battles Of this he gave sufficient Proof in the first Instance of their Deliverance. When he brought them out of Egypt, they were a mere Croud of Women and Children, and of Men trained up in Slavery, under hard and cruel Task-masters. On the Egyptian's Side were the antient Soldiery of the Kingdom, a mighty Power of Chariots and Horses, led on by Princes, and by Nobles: And what was the Ifue? The Strength of Egypt was destroy'd, and the People faved. And the Glory which God took to Himself in faving a weak People against the Strength of the Chariots and Horses of Pharoab, is finly described in the Song of Moses.

finely

" I will fing unto the Lord, for he hath " triumphed gloriously; the Horse and his

" Rider hath he thrown into the Sea."

"The Lord is a Man of War, the Lord is his Name. Pharoab's Chariets and his

" Hoft hath he cast into the Sea."

It may be thought perhaps no Wonder that the People at this Time had neither Chariots nor Horfes; for where should they himov

have

have them? They were themselves but Slaves. and doubtless their Masters were cautious. enough not to put the Power of War into their Hands. Let us go on then, and fee how the Case stood afterwards, when the People had an Opportunity of furnishing themselves with Horses and Chariots; if it had been lawful for them fo to do. After the Death of Moses, Joshua was in Command over the People: His Victories over the Canaanites, so alarmed the Neighbouring Princes, that with one Consent they confederated against him, and brought together an incredible Multitude in Arms: and as it is particularly remarked, with Horles and Chariots very many. Joshua preval'd against them, and took all their Horses. and Chariots; and had an Opportunity of strengthening his Army with Cavalry. But observe the express Command of God to him. Thou shalt bough, or hamitring, their Horses, and burn their Chariots with Fire, (Joh. xi. 6.) Is this the common Practice of War? Do Princes, who want Horses to mount their own Troops, use to destroy those taken from the Enemy, or render them useless by hamstringing them? There can be no Foundation for the Command

mand to destroy the Horses, but this only, that it was not lawful for Joshua to keep them, for the Reason already given.

I have laid these Observations together, to give Light to a general Precept of the Law, in which every Prince, who should succeed to the Government of Israel, was concerned; and upon which the true Interpretation of the Prophecy, now before us, does, as I conceive, depend. It is to be found in the 17th of Deut. in these Words,

- " He (that is, whoever should be King of
- " Ifrael) shall not multiply Horses to him-
- felf, nor cause the People to return to
- " Egypt, to the end that he should multi" ply Horses." If we consider the Situation of Judea how it was surrounded by
 Warlike Nations, who had strong Armies
 both of Horse and Foot; it will be impossible to justify this Law by the Measures
 of human Prudence: But the true Reason
 of the Law is express'd in the 20th of Deut.
- " When thou goest out to Battle against
- " thine Enemies, and feest Horses and
 - " Chariots, and a People more than thou,
 - " be not afraid of them : For the Lord thy
 - God is with thee, which brought thee

"out of the Land of Egypt." When God forbad his People the Use of Horses and Chariots, he promised that He would be to them instead of Horses and Chariots. This Law therefore was to be a standing Trial of Prince and People, whether they had Trust and Considence in God their Deliverer. In this View there is Sense in the Law; for he who gave it, knew how to remedy the Inconveniences which naturally attended it. In any other View it is unaccountable; and if weighed in the Scales of worldly Politicks ridiculous and absurd.

The next Thing to be considered is, what Effect this Law produced, and what Influence the Obedience or Disobedience of the Princes to this Law, had upon the

Affairs of Ifrael.

It is evident from the Jewish History, that this Law was observed for near Four Hundred Years, to the End of David's Reign, and in Part of Solomon's. That Joshua had no Chariots or Horses in his Army, has been already observed, when Deborah and Baruch delivered Israel from Sistera, who had Nine Hundred Chariots of Iron. (Judg. v. 15.) It it expresty said in the Text, That Baruch was sent on Foot

into

into the Valley. And in this manner did the antient Judges of Ifrael wage War, who were raifed up from time to time by God to deliver his People. And in this manner, David, who extended his Empire from Egypt to Syria, and Eastwards as far as Euphrates, in this manner did he wage War; not for Want of Chariots and Horfes, for he took from Hadadezar, Son to the King of Zobah, in one Day a Thoufand Chariots, and Seven Hundred Horfemen ; but he boughed all the Chariot-Horfes. reserving of them only for an Hundred Chariots, (2 Sam. viii. 4.) When he had taken a Thousand Chariots, with their Horses, and destroy'd Nine out of Ten, it is evident he had no Thought of raising a Military Force of this kind; probably he retained them for his State, and might do it lawfully, without incurring the Guilt of multiplying Horses, which are the Terms in which the Law is conceived. Certain it is, he made no use of them in War; and so far he complied with the true Sense and Spirit of the Law. What Use he made of them, is no where faid: But when Abfalom aimed at the Crown, he prepared Chariots and Horses, and Fifey Men to run before him, (2 Sam.

(2) Sam. xv. 1.) which was plainly affecting the Pomp and State of a King, and yet, in the Day of Battle, we find him mounted on a Mule, the Colt of an Afs. And if we may judge what the King did, by feeing what this Rival of the Crown affected to do. it is plain David's Hundred Chariots were uled for State in Peace, and not for Strength in War. And in this Senfe, I conceive, we are to understand a Passage in Jeremiab, where he promises the People of Fuldb, that if they prove obedient, there should enter into the Gates of the City Kings and Princes, fitting on the Throne of David, riding in Chariots and on Horfes, Jer. zvii. 29. which is plainly a Description of a State of Peace and Sceurity; (compare Fer. 27.) and taken in any other Sense, it must stand in Contradiction to the Law in Deut, and many other Texts of Scripture. But to go on. It is very much to be remarked, that during this Period, (i.e. from the coming out of Egypt to the End of David's Reign) the People of Hruel never suffered for want of

set in in study by a value of these

indeed, (as Mr. Mede and other Learned think) part of the Prophecy of Foreman, this Diffinition will be necessary to reconcile this Passage, Jer. xvii. 25. and that which is now to be found, Zech. ix. 9.

Force and Strength in War; they were often punished, as they often deserved it, for their Idolatry; but whenever they repented and turned to God, their Deliverance did not wait for want of Forces. Troops few in Number, and seemingly unfit for Action, supported neither by Chariots nor by Horsemen, proved an Overmatch for Royal Armies. This may be verify'd in the Instances of Gideon, Baruch, Jeptha and Samuel, and of all others called forth by God to save his People.

During this Period also it was that the Kingdom of Ifrael was carried to its utmost Height by David. He held the Kings about him, how gallantly foever they and their Troops were mounted, under Tribute and Subjection, tho' he himself rode on a Mule, and provided no better Equipage for his Son on his Coronation-Day. "Canfe, fays Da-" vid, Solomon my Son to ride upon mine " own Mule, and bring him down to Gi-" bon, and let Zadock the Priest, and Na-" than the Prophet, anoint him their King " over Ifrael." (I Kings i. 33, 34.) When David looked back and contemplated on this State of Things, he might well fay, Some trust in Chariots, and Some in Horses,

but we will remember the Name of the Lord

our God, Pfal. xx. 7.

In the Reign of Solomon Things quickly changed. He married the Daughter of the King of Egypt, and opened a Commerce between that Country and his own; and the next News we hear of him is, " That he had " forty thousand Stalls of Horses for his " Chariots, and twelve thousand Horsemen." (1 Kings iv. 26.) They who succeeded him followed his Example; and from his Time the Kings of Judah and Ifrael had, whenever they were able to keep them, a Strength of Chariots and Horsemen.

Let us fee now what they got by this Change. Solomon came to a Kingdom firmly established, the Princes round him were tributary to him, and those at a Distance feared and admired him: but Troubles foon overtook him, the Edomite on one Side, the King of Damascus on the other, insulted him; nor was he able with all his new Forces to quell these upstart Enemies.

But the most remarkable Event, and which feems defigned by Providence to humble the Pride of Israel, was, the Divifion of the Kingdom upon the Death of Solomon; which produced a War of many Years '

R

Years Continuance between Ifrael and Judab, in which their Forces were employed with various Success in weakening and destroying each other. During this Time the King of Egypt, the Country which had furnished Solomon with all his Horses, came up against Terufalem, and took it, and carried away all the Treasures of the Temple, and of the Royal Palace, which had been long gathering by David and Solomon: And Rehoboam, the Son of Solomon, became Servant to the King of Egypt, (2 Chron. xii, 8, 9.) Thus did Solomon and his House prosper with their great Strength of Charlots and Horses. Indeed we may from this Time date the Ruin of Ifrael; the two Kingdoms were fo weakened by their internal War, that they were unable to defend themselves against their Neighbours; and became Servants by Turns, fometimes to the Kings of Egypt, fometimes to the Kings of Affyria and Babylon; till after many and great Distresses they were carried into Captivity, the People of Israel into Assyria, and Judah into Babylon.

During this Period we find that God had not utterly forfaken his People, but oftentimes gave them very fignal Deliverances.

But

But it is to be observed, that these Deliverances were not effected by their great Forces, but by the Interposition of God, when their Condition was such that they lost all Hope in their own Strength, and were willing to rely on God. Thus was Hezekiah delivered at a Time when he was so weak, that the Asyrians instantly offered him two thousand Horse, if he on his Part were able to set Riders upon them, (2 Kings xviii. 23.) The Case will generally be found the same in other Instances.

By this short Account it appears that David was the last of the Rulers over Ifrae! who observed the Law against multiplying Horses; and he was the last also who can be pretended to have been a Deliverer of the People. This Truth was feen by the Author of the Epistle to the Hebrews, who when he reckons up the antient Worthies of his Country who trusted in God, and " by " Faith subdued Kingdoms, who out of " Weakness were made strong, and waxed " valiant in Fight, and turned to Flight the " Armies of the Aliens," thuts up his Catalogue with David, as being the last to whom these Characters could be applied, and

and after whom there arose none like to

him to fave the People of Ifrael.

But it may be asked perhaps, Were the Kings of Judab and Israel punished for having Chariots and Horses in their Armies? Does not the Scripture charge them with Idolatry, and many other Crimes, which brought on their Ruin? No doubt there were many other Crimes, and of a deeper dye, for which these Kings and their People were punished; but the true Question is, Was it a Crime at all to multiply Horses and Chariots?

The shortest Answer to this Question, will be to examine what Account their own Prophets have given of the Causes of their Ruin.

Isaiab lived in the Reign of four Kings of Judab, and prophesied of the Captivity. In his second Chapter, he thus recounts the Sins of his People; "They be replenished from the East, and are Soothsayers, like

- " the Philistines, and they please themselves
- " in the Children of Strangers; their Land
- " also is full of Silver and Gold, neither is there any End of their Treasures: Their
- " Land also is full of Horses, neither is there
- " any End of their Chariots."

So again, Chap. xxxi. "Wo to them that "go down to Egypt for Help, and stay on "Horses, and trust in Chariots, because they are many; and in Horsemen, because they are very strong, but they look not unto the Holy One of Israel, neither seek

" the Lord."

The Prophet Hosea lived under the same Kings that Isaiab did, and foresaw the Miseries coming upon his Country; he exhorts the People to Repentance, and has put a short Form of Confession into their Mouths; the two great Articles of it are these—"We" will not ride upon Horses, neither will we "say any more to the Work of our Hands, "Ye are our Gods". (Chap. xiv. 3.)

Consider now what is the Guilt of having a Country sull of Horses: Moral Evil surely there is none in it; and to charge all Princes with Iniquity who have a Strength of Horses in their Armies, and to transfer to them the Crime charged on this Account on the Kings of Judah and Israel, would be intolerable Abuse of the Phrase and Language of Scripture. But the Kings of Israel were exalted to the Throne on Condition that they should renounce the Assistance of Horses and Horsemen, and depend on God for Success in the Day of Battle.

Y 3

Having

Having seen then what the Law, and the Prophets, and the Experience of many Ages had taught the Jews to think of their Princes and their martial Preparations; let us look back to the Prophecy relating to the Messias, Zech. ix. 9. The Words are these; "Re-" joice greatly, O Daughter of Zion; shout "O Daughter of Jerusalem: Behold thy "King cometh unto thee: He is just, and "having Salvation, lowly, and riding upon "an Ass, and upon a Colt, the Fole of an "Ass.

" And I will cut off the Chariot from " Ephraim, and the Horse from Jerusalem."

You see here that the King foretold was to save the People. Consider then what sort of King was to be expected: Is it possible to imagine that God would send a King to save them, who should be like the Kings who had undone them? Is it not more reasonable to imagine he should resemble those who had indeed been Deliverers of their Country? Kings who seared God, and therefore seared no Enemy; who, tho mounted on Asses, and Colts, the Foles of Asses, were able to put to slight the Thousands and ten Thousands of Chariots and Horses that came against them?

The King foretold by the Prophet was

how could be have deferred this Character, had he appeared in the Pomp and Pride of War, surrounded with Horses and Chariots, in direct Opposition to the Law of God? Or, as he was to bring Salvation to the People, could he make use of those Means which God never had prospered, and which he had sufficiently declared he never would?

You fee then how effential it was to the Character of a King of Wrael, who was to be just, and lowly, and to bring Salvation with him, that he should come riding on an Ass, and a Colt, the Fole of an Afs. But if any Doubt can yet remain, let the Prophet himfelf explain it, who, immediately after his Description of the promised King, adds, " And I will cut off the Chariot from Ephra-" im, and the Horse from Jerusalem;" plainly shewing, that the Character given of the Messias, that he should ride on an Ass, was in Opposition to the Pride of their warlike Kings, who by their great Strength in Chariots and Horses had ruined themselves and their People. side the air said of terito

Hosea: I will have Mency upon the House of Judah, and will save them by the Lord their Y 4 God,

God, and will not fave them by Bow, nor by Sword, nor by Battle, by Horfes, nor by Horfemen, i. 7. Thus also the Prophet Micab promised Deliverance to the Remnant of Jacob, and then adds, And it Shall come to pass in that Day, faith the Lord, that I will cut off thy Horses out of the midst of thee, and I will destroy thy Chariots; and I will cut off the Cities of thy Land, and throw down all the strong Holds, ver. 10, 11. Some Commentators have laboured to reconcile these Things, imagining, that there is a great Contradiction, in promising to fave the People, and at the same time to cut off their Forces. and throw down their strong Holds: But the true Sense is, that the Salvation should be so perfect and compleat, that they should want neither these Forces nor their strong Holds, for God would be to them instead of Armies and fortified Towns.

These Passages mutually support and enlighten each other, and shew undeniably what the Prophet had in view when he foretold that the Messias should ride on an Ass.

And what is there in all this to make Sport for Unbelievers? Has it appeared to be a mere trifling Circumstance in the Character of a King of Ifrael, whether he had Chariots

and

and Horses of War or no? Or was it any Reproach to Christ to ride into ferusalem on the Fole of an Ass, when David, the greatest of his Ancestors, and Solomon the wisest, as long as he was wise, rode in the same manmer? Can the fews object to this Circumstance, and yet talk of the Glories of David, and the Magnissicence of Solomon, who in the midst of all their Glory and Magnissicence did the very same thing? Or can they stumble at this Character of the Messias, without forgetting by what Princes their Ancestors were saved, and by what undone?

From this general Account of the Affairs of the Kings of Ifrael, and the particular Circumstances they were under in regard to their own Law, there arise some Resections, which may be properly here mentioned. As first: The Law given to the Kings of Ifrael, confidered together with the History of that Nation, forms a very strong Presumption for the divine Original of the Law of Moses. For supposing Moses to be a mere human Legislator, like Solon or Lycurgus, what could tempt him to forbid the Princes of his Country the Use of Horses and Chariots for their Defence? Should fuch a Law be proposed for France or Germany at this Day, what

what would the World think of it? Or fupposing this Law to be his own Contrivance. how comes it to pass that the Event and Success of Things thro' many Ages does fo exactly correspond to the Law? That the Princes prospered, and extended their Dominion over great Countries, when they had neither Chariots nor Horses; and were ruined and undone when they were strong in these Forces? Can it be supposed that the History of many Ages, and which relates the Affairs not only of the Princes of Israel, but of other contemporary Kings, is all forged, and merely to shew an Agreement between the History and this particular Law? Or how shall we account for the Conduct of the Prophets, who faw the People ruined, and instead of reproaching them with Cowardice, and a Neglect of their necessary Defence, Things which usually usher in such Missortunes, reproach them with having been too strong, too powerful in Horses and Horsemen?

These Appearances can never be accounted for by any human Contrivance, and they plainly shew that the Hand of God was in this Thing from the beginning to the end.

2dly

adly, We may from hence collect the Nature of David's Crime in numbering the People of Ifrael. Had he acted in the true Spirit of a King of Ifrael, he would have been less sollicitous about the Number of his Forces, and would have trusted God with the Work which God had undertaken, and which he had constantly, and in David's Case in a very particular manner, discharged with Fidelity. Read the Promise in the Law- " When thou goeft to battle " against thine Enemies; and thou seeft " Horses and Chariots, and a People more than thou, be not afraid of them, for the " Lord thy God is with thee." And confider, what but Distrust in God could tempt David to number his Forces? Happy had it been for him and the People had he then reflected, that God taketh no Pleasure in the Strength of an Horse, neither delighteth be in any Man's Legs. He ought to have remember'd what his own Experience had taught him, that God wanted not the Affiftance of Hotfe or Foot to execute the Defigns of his Providence.

Johah was not guilty of the fame Fault in his warlike Preparations against the King of

Egypt.

Egypt. Johab has so good a Character in Scripture, that both Jews and Christians have been at a loss to account for the unfortunate End he came to, being flain in Battle against the King of Egypt. The learned Dr. Prideaux has justified his Conduct in opposing the Passage of the King of Egypt, because it was a Service due to the King of Affgria, to whom Josiah was a Vasfal: Be it so; yet his Duty to the King of Asyria could not dissolve his Dependance on an higher Master: He went to war as a Vassal of the King of Assyria, but did he ask Counsel of God as King of Judah? Or was he attended to the War with such Forces only as the Kings of Judab might lawfully use? That he had Chariots and Horsemen, appears plainly from the Account of his Death, 2 Chron. xxxv. 24. for he was wounded in one Chariot, removed into another to be carried off, and 'tis very probable that there were Chariots and Horsemen many in his Army, since there appears no Scruple in him upon this Head. That this was the true, or the only Cause of his Misfortune, I dare not affirm, for I have no express Authority to support me

in affirming it; but this I see, that he was found in the Day of Battle not with the Equipage of a King of Judah, but surrounded with Forces, which the Law of his God had forbid him to trust to, and which had often proved a Strength fatal to his Ancestors.

FINIS.



BOOKS



Parables, and eight upon the Miracles of our Saviour: Nine upon Ecclesiastes, and fix upon occasional Subjects. All preach'd at the Cathedral Church of Wintelester. By Abraham Markeland, D. D. late Prebendary of the said Church, and Master of 8t. Cross. 2 Vols.

Price 7. s.

27008

ftreet, 1744.

2. The pious Country Parishioner: Being Directions how a Christian may manage every Day through the whole Course of his Life, with Safety and Success. Advice how to spend religiously the Sabbath-day; what Books of the Holy Scriptures ought to be read first; and how much they out-do, in Eloquence, and the Rules of human Art: The whole Method of Education: The ill Confequence of uninstructed Children: How to tame their Paffions, and make them a Comfort to their Friends, and an Ornament to their Country. The Fasts and Feasts. To which are added, Collects for the most important Virtues which adorn the Soul. Also a Discourse concerning the indispensable, though in Country Parishes, much neglected, Duty of frequenting the Blessed Sacrament of the Lord's Supper. Wherein the Nature of it is described, the Obligation of f requenting it enforced. All the Excuses, usually brought for the Neglect of it, answer'd. The uninstructed Soul taught what he must do, in order to be a worthy Communicant. And because all must die, Rules are given to fet the Soul right in Sickness to prepare for a happy Change at Death. So that in this one Treatife are contained all the Duties requisite to Salvation. The ninth Edition. Price 1 s. 6 d. or 15 s. per Dozen to those that give them away. 3. A

3. A Collection of Tracts, Moral and Theological: Placed in the Order wherein they were first published, viz. 1. A Letter to a Deift. 2. The Foundation of Moral Goodness, Part I. 3. The Foundation of Moral Good-4. Divine Rectitude. 5. A fecond Letnefs, Part II. ter to a Deift. 6. The Law of Truth With some additional Notes; and a Supplement concerning Rectitude.

Price 55.

4. Five Sermons on the following Subjects, viz. The extreme Folly and Wretchedness of an atheistic Inclination. God's Government of the World a fure and most joyful Truth. The Dignities and Distinctions of human Nature. Natural and moral Proofs of a future State. Preached in the Country, and publish'd at the Request of a Friend. The Second Edition. To which is now added, An Affize Sermon, formerly preached and printed at Newcastle upon

Tyne. Price 1 s. 6 d.

5. Twenty Sermons preach'd on several Occasions, to a Society of British Merchants, in foreign Parts. 1. At the opening the Chapel in the Conful of Legborn's House. 2. At the first Celebration of the Lord's Supper in the same Society: Before feveral Persons of Quality in their Travels. 4. On Occasion of the Death of the Right Honourable the Lord Charles Somerfet, who died at Rome of the Smallpox, March 4. N. S. 1709-10. 5. On Occasion of the Death of his Royal Highness the Prince of Denmark, December 16. N. S. 1709. 6. After the Seige of Toulon. 7. A Funeral Sermon for Captain John Bailey, Master of the Ship the Hanover, killed in an Engagement with the French Gallies, on the Coast of Tuscany, near Monte Nero. 8. Before the Admiral and Commander of her Majesty's Fleet in the Streights. 9. A Farewel Sermon in the Year 1711. 10. Preach'd after the Settlement of a new Chaplain, Jan. N. S. 1712-13, &c. By Bafil Kennet, D. D. late Prefident of Corpus-Christi College in Oxon. Price 45. 6 d.

6. Twenty-fix Sermons on various Subjects. By Adam. Batty. M. A. Late Rector of St. John's Clerkenwell, and Lecturer of St Dunstan's in the West. The Second

Edition. In two Volumes. Price 8 s.

7. A practical Discourse concerning Death, 8-vo. Nineteenth Edition. The same in 12mo. The Twentieth Edition. Price 3 s. 6 d. or 1 s. 6 d.

8. A practical Discourse concerning a future Judgment.

The Ninth Edition. Price 45

o. A Discourse concerning the Divine Providence. The

Sinth Edition, Price 4 s 6 d.

10. A Discourse concerning the Happiness of good Men, and the Punishment of the Wicked in the next World. Containing the Proofs of the Immortality of the Soul, and immortal Life. The Fourth Edition. Price 4.5. 6 d.

Written originally in French by Monsieur Paschal. Translated into English by Basil Kennet, D. D. late Principal of Corpus-Christi College, Oxon. Price 41. 6 d. — Had that incomparable Person, Monsieur Paschal, been a little more indulgent to himself, the World might probably have enjoy'd him much longer: Whereas, through too great an Application to his Studies in his Youth, he contracted that ill Habit of Body, which, after a tedious bickness, carried him off in the fortieth Year of his Age: And the whole History we have of his Life till that Time, is but one continued Account of the Behaviour of a noble Soul struggling under innumerable Pains and Distempers. Vide Spectator, Vol. II. No. 116. Price 51.

12. The Christian Life, from its Beginning to its Confummation in Glory: Together with the several Means and Instruments of Christianity conducing thereunto. With Directions for private Devotions and Forms of Prayer. Fitted to the several States of Christians. By John Scott, D. D. Rector of St. Gyles's in the Fields, London. The Tenth Edition, corrected. In five Vo-

lames. Price 11. 15.

13. An Essay on Generosity and Greatness of Spirit. The Builders of Colleges, Hospitals and Schools prais'd and commended. The invaluble B'essing of a sound, useful and pious Education; especially with regard to School Learning. With a particular View to Archbishop Whitgist's Foundation in Croydon, Surrey. By Henry Mills, M. A. Master of the said Foundation, and Rector of Mestham in Surry. Price 35. 6 d.

14. The Gent'eman instructed in the Conduct of a virtuous and happy Life. In three Parts. Written for the Instruction of a young Nob'eman. To which is added, A Word to the Ladies, by way of Supplement to the first Part The Eleventh Edition, Corrected. Price 5 s.